GRAMMAR OF OLD TAMIL FOR STUDENTS 1 st Edition

Eva Wilden

HAL Id: halshs-01892342

https://halshs.archives-ouvertes.fr/halshs-01892342v2

Submitted on 24 Jan 2020

GRAMMAR OF OLD TAMIL FOR STUDENTS

1st Edition

NETamil Series

Classical Tamil is among the oldest literary traditions of the Indian sub-continent, one that reaches back to the first centuries CE and that produced many literary, devotional and theoretical works for more than a thousand years.

The palm-leaf manuscripts at our disposal for the study of this literature are, at best, approximately three hundred years old, and the paper manuscripts for the most part are more recent still. In sharp contrast with current printed editions, these manuscripts exhibit an often bewildering degree of textual variation, from simple variants and occasional glosses to wide-ranging commentaries, many of which still await a first publication.

This wealth of primary material is inexorably yielding to the ravages of the sub-tropical climate and are for the most part not even properly catalogued. With each crumbling leaf, our chances of arriving at an understanding of how the Tamil intellectual universe was construed and interacted with other parts of the Indian world diminish.

Since 2012, an international team of scholars in India and in Europe has been studying these materials from the early stages of digitisation through collation to studies of codicology, text-critical analysis and cultural history.

The aim of this NETamil Series, the direct outcome of their endeavour, is to present significant studies in the field, and thereby to attempt to reconstruct the processes of interaction and transmission that took place prior to the putative 'Tamil renaissance' of the 19th century.

GRAMMAR OF OLD TAMIL

FOR STUDENTS

1st Edition

Eva Wilden

Table of Contents

Preface

A map of Old Tamil grammar would still show many blank patches, although the existing descriptive works are numerous, at least in comparison to what has been published for other Dravidian languages. One reason for this is that most of such descriptions have been written by people who approach the subject from the vantage point of modern Tamil and who see Old Tamil primarily as a precursor of their own language. Another reason is that the prolific, fascinating and invaluable tradition of *ilakkaṇam*, grammar, has been in certain respects as much of an obstacle as it has been of help in understanding. Moreover, the current grammatical representations of Old Tamil are lopsided in that they pay considerable and very detailed attention to morphology (which is in fact relatively simple) and next to none to syntax (which is in many languages hard to grasp and which, for Old Tamil, is now very hard to reconstruct fully). But it is perhaps an attitude of devotion to this ancient and remarkable literary language – a natural devotion may be, but one that has for political ends too often been whipped up into an unreflecting and distortive fervour – that has hampered the dispassionate study of Old Tamil. In consequence, the language is less well taught than it could be: to this day there is no grammar for students, no manuals, and few readers. Tamil has the aura of a religion, something not to be learned by the rod, but to be imbibed. It has become an emotive identity-marker for many Tamilians, and this often seems to mean that students from all backgrounds feel discouraged from asking questions about, for instance, how a given sentence is to be construed. Instead, they gradually school themselves to be content with a vague exposition of sentence-meanings that does not reveal details of sentence-structure.

That is the situation the Classical Tamil Winter and Summer Seminars (CTWS/CTSS) have been trying to remedy for the last fifteen years. This year the CTWS/CTSS went into its 16th year, which means that the beginners course was held for the 8th time. Although the Reader and the Grammar that grew out of these courses

are still far from adequate, significant progress has been made and it seems now time to put the Grammar to press so that it can serve a wider audience. The Reader will soon follow, but for now it has been put online on the NETamil website (www.netamil.org) under "Learning", along with further (advanced) readers with full analytical glossaries, based on the material produced for the CTWS/CTSS. The grammar will doubtless continue to grow from continued scrutiny of the growing corpus whose language it attempts to describe, which we might characterise as almost all surviving Tamil literature of the first millennium. I say "almost", since I am conscious that we are not making a concerted effort to work through the language of Tamil epigraphs. Since for most texts reliable editions, let alone statistics for their morphology and lexicon, are not available, the coverage is inevitably still patchy. Nonetheless, within the last ten years a number of critical editions have appeared and several more are under preparation by the NETamil team, and electronically searchable texts have also become markedly more numerous. Still, whenever I open a new book, I come across a form not yet included in these pages.

One strategy would be to distinguish strictly between the grammars of Early, Middle and Late Old Tamil as well as Middle Tamil, but such a periodisation, although it might make the task of grammatical description somewhat easier to order, would necessarily be distortive, since both absolute and relative chronology of Old Tamil literature is for the most part not well established and since many texts cover several strata. Moreover it would not be practical for students, who want a single reference work where they can find anything they might need. Thus both students and teachers will have to live with the fact that the area covered will continue to grow, along with the descriptive text and the account of syntax. Things might be speeding up because the community of scholars working in the field has definitely increased over the last ten years.

The book is still conceived as a companion volume to a one-month course, true to the original scheme of the CTWS/CTSS. It is thus divided into chapters that correspond to lessons numbered from 1 to 20, but arranged and numbered in such a way that the whole can be consulted as an independent grammar, starting with introductory

material, a treatment of sandhi, nominal morphology and syntax, verb morphology and syntax, poetics and metrics. The schedule page names the order in which the chapters are supposed to be taught and names the example texts brought together in the Reader. **Please note that examples throughout this grammar, when rendered in Tamil script, appear spaced according to scholarly conventions, namely with sandhi and metrical splitting, while the transcriptions in roman script mark instead the divisions between words.**

A select bibliography including the editions of the texts quoted as examples (in so far as no critical editions are available) and the works on grammar and lexicography mentioned in this grammar are added at the end.

There are many people I should thank for enabling me to bring together the material for this book and for helping me to correct it, first of all, of course, the scholars with whom I studied Tamil: S.A. Srinivasan, T.V. Gopal Iyer and T.S. Gangadharan, but also the colleagues from the *Caṅkam* project and now the NETamil project, who have been reading and discussing with me over all these years: my husband Jean-Luc Chevillard, Sascha Ebeling (with whom I first devised the Reader and with whom I was able to discuss the whole manuscript), Thomas Lehmann, G. Vijayavenugopal, T. Rajeswari, Indra Manuel, Emmanuel Francis, Suganya Anandakichenin, T. Raja-rethinam, K. Nachimuthu, as well as all the students of the various CTWS and CTSS, many of them by now also colleagues, who have been coming to Pondicherry and asking questions. Special thanks for one final full round of discussions and correction go to the Hamburg team, Jonas Buchholz, Giovanni Ciotti, Victor D'Avella and Erin McCann. Further last-minute corrections were suggested by Hugo David. I am also grateful to Dominic Goodall and Charlotte Schmid, who first encouraged me to organise Tamil winter classes at the centre of the EFEO in Pondy. For the typesetting I thank T.V. Kamalambal. This book is the third to be published in the new NETamil series, generously funded by an Advanced Grant from the ERC.

Puducherry   Eva Wilden
March 2018

Abbreviations of Grammatical Terminology

abs.	absolutive
acc.	accusative
adj.	adjective
adv.	adverb
C	consonant
comp.	comparative
dat.	dative
f.	feminine
f.v.	finite verb
gen.	genitive
h.	honorific
hab.fut.	habitual future
i.a.	imperfective aspect
id.	ideophone
inf.	infinitive
inst.	instrumental
inter.pron.	interrogative pronoun
ipt.	imperative
loc.	locative
m.	masculine
n.	neuter
neg.	negative
O	object
obl.	oblique
opt.	optative
P	predicate
p.a.	perfective aspect
p.n.	proper name
part.n.	participial noun

pey.	*peyareccam*
pl.	plural
pron.n.	pronominalised noun
S	subject
sg.	singular
soc.	sociative
sub.	subjunctive
suff.	suffix
ͧ	overshort *-u* deleted before vowel
V	vowel
v.n.	verbal noun
voc.	vocative
v.r.	verbal root

Schedule

1st week	Bhakti (*Tēvāram*, *Tiruvāymoḻi*), *Tirukkuṟaḷ*
Ch. 1	nominal forms (non-marking of cases, word order)
Ch. 2	nominal sentences (finite verb – participial noun – pronominalised noun)
Ch. 3	attribution (nouns, pronouns, adjectives, adverbs)
Ch. 6	clauses: *viṉaiyeccam* (absolutive/converb)
Ch. 7	clauses: infinitive
2nd week	*Mutoḷḷāyiram*, *Peruṅkāppiyam* (*Cilappatikāram*, *Cīvaka Cintāmaṇi*)
Ch. 8	clauses: *peyareccam*, habitual future
Ch. 9a,b	verbal roots (for *peyareccam* and other forms), verbal nouns
Ch. 4	string attribution (mixed nominal and verbal forms)
Ch. 10	moods (verbal sentences, tenses/aspects)
Ch. 11	coordination and questions (*-um*, *-ō*, *-kol*, *kollō*)
3rd week	**Poetics and Commentaries (Nakkīraṉ's preamble, TP)**
Ch. 12	embedded clauses (*eṉ*, *āku*, *pōl*)
Ch. 13	clauses: conditional (factual and hypothetical), concessive and causal
Ch. 14	negation (*al/il*, zero suffix, negative stem, double verb forms)
Ch. 5	denominative (pronominalised nouns as predicate nouns)
Ch. 15	double verb forms, *muṟṟeccam* and auxiliaries
4th week	*Caṅkam* (*Puṟanāṉūṟu*, *Aiṅkuṟunūṟu*, *Kuṟuntokai*, *Naṟṟiṇai*)
Ch. 16	particles and word order (*-ē*)
Ch. 17	modal particles (*maṉ/maṉṟa*, *āl*, *amma*, *tilla*, *teyya*)
Ch. 18	circular construction (*pūṭṭuvil*)
Ch. 19	the formulaic repertoires and formulae as syntactic matrices
Ch. 20	metre: *Āciriyappā* and *Veṇpā*

Introduction

For the purpose of this grammar, let us call classical Tamil the language that developed, or rather, was developed, out of the various dialects spoken throughout the southernmost part of the Indian subcontinent, as a literary medium and as a medium of intellectual discourse, during the course of the first millennium CE. Here, we shall neither be concerned with exact chronology, taking the beginning of the Common Era as a convenient starting point, nor with the relation of that entity to the language that has officially gained the title of "Classical Tamil" on the part of the Indian government in the year 2004. Our target is not the language of inscriptions, which starts considerably earlier, but the literary and theoretical works that have been preserved in manuscripts, all of them in metrical form, that is, the *Caṅkam*-corpus, the *Kīḻkkaṇakku*-works, the five "great poems" (Tamil *peruṅkāppiyam* ~ Skt. *mahākāvya-*) of which only three have survived, the Śaiva bhakti corpus called the Twelve *Tirumuṟai*, the Vaiṣṇava bhakti corpus called the *Nālāyirat Tivyappirapantam*, the grammatical treatises and thesauri that start with the *Tolkāppiyam*, a few other great poems that have not been included among the five, as well as a number of other poetic works that still belong to the same period but cannot be conveniently classified as part of a corpus. For an overview of genres and periods, see the attached folding sheets at the beginning.

Again for the sake of convenience we may distinguish three phases of Old Tamil, namely Early, Middle and Late Old Tamil, followed, around the turn of the 10th century, by Middle Tamil, in its turn followed, in the 19th century, by Modern (Formal) Tamil. The table below lists the most tangible features of each phase along with some texts that belong to it, but it has to be kept in mind that not a single text (most of them anthologies) exhibits features of only one of these

phases. The reason for this is partly that many texts were generated over a longer period of time, but partly also that it is not always easy to distinguish temporal from regional variations.

Old Tamil: *0-1000 AD

Early Old Tamil	*Kuruntokai*, *Narriṇai*, *Aka-nāṉūru*, *Puranāṉūru*, *Aiṅ-kuṟunūṟu*, *Patiṟṟṟuppattu*, *Pattuppāṭṭu*	stable word order, particles, old pronouns, honorific, formulae, Āciriyappā
Middle Old Tamil	*Kīḻkkaṇakku*, *Cilappati-kāram*, *Paripāṭal*, *Antāti*-s, *Kalittokai*	old morphology, new style/content new pronouns + plural, word order and particle chaos, hybrid forms, rarely present tense, Veṇpā + *etukai* rhyme
Late Old Tamil	*Tēvaram*, *Tiruvāymoḻi*, *Muttoḷḷāyiram*, *Cintāmaṇi*, *Tirukkōvaiyār*, *Periyatirumoḻi* [*Kamparamāyaṇam*, 12th c.]	metrical revolution + *etukai*, standardisation of present tense, plural and pronouns; less pron. nouns, fewer formulae, new vocabulary
Middle Tamil: 1000-1900 AD		new auxiliaries, (Commentary prose)

Modern Tamil: 19th century

As for the transition from Old to Middle Tamil, stipulated for example by Zvelebil 1957a, there are no statistics that would demonstrate a clear shift and further morphological changes. Until the literature of the second millennium has been treated in more detail, we may assume that two factors justify the designation, namely, firstly, the gradual vanishing of many older forms except in some frozen expressions and, secondly, the development of commentary prose.

The list found at the bottom of this page shows the most important morphological changes that occur in the transition from Early Old Tamil to Middle and Late Old Tamil. More important than morphology, however, are two shifts in orientation that concern the overall syntactic patterns of the language. To begin with, Early Old Tamil is a language with very little explicit morphological mark-up (especially with respect to case suffixes) and a correspondingly strict word order complemented by a system of particles for modes and tenses, not unlike what is known from languages such as Classical Chinese. Probably through the influence of literary Sanskrit along with the newly developing rhyme patterns (*etukai*), the strict word order is gradually weakened, to be supplanted by more explicit morphology in the course of time, although it never reaches the freedom of a highly inflected Indo-European language. The particle system simply disintegrates and is lost (except as metrical filler). Moreover, the verb in Early Old Tamil is better described as marked by aspect rather than by tense. The two old aspects, imperfective (present, future, hypothetical) and perfective (past, aorist, irreal), in most grammars simply called non-past and past, later become future and past respectively with the development of a modal auxiliary construction based on the verb *kil-tal*, "to be able to", into the present tense in -கின்ற்- *-kinr-*.

personal pronouns:	1ˢᵗ singular nominative யான் *yāṉ* > நான் *nāṉ*
	2ⁿᵈ singular oblique stem நின் *niṉ* > உன் *uṉ*
plural suffixes:	-கள் *-kaḷ* (first for neuter, then added to old honorific
	-அர்/-ஆர் *-ar/-ār*, then gradually taking over)
	-காள் *-kāḷ* for vocative
	-மார் *-mār* for 3ʳᵈ plural
	-பீர் *-mīr* for 2ⁿᵈ plural
present tense:	-கின்ற்- *-kinr-*
negative absolutive:	-ஆமல் *-āmal*

special conditionals: -ஏல் -*ēl* (after root, after *peyareccam* and finite verb, after noun)

-ஆகில் -*ākil*

-இல் -*il*

-ஆல் -*āl* (mostly already after absolutive, but also found after finite forms)

special imperatives: -ஏல் -*ēl* (negative)

-மின்கள் -*miṉkaḷ* (old form plus plural suffix)

-ஈர்கள் -*īrkaḷ*

It is possible to be more specific about the genesis of the oldest corpus, that of the *Caṅkam*, at least with respect to those texts for which critical editions have appeared or are under preparation in the Pondicherry *Caṅkam* project.   To briefly sum up a complicated process, after an undetermined number of centuries of oral transmission the first anthologies began to be compiled, probably under the Pāṇṭiya aegis. The oldest parts of the corpus are, in Akam (erotic genre), *Kuṟuntokai*, *Naṟṟiṇai*, *Akanāṉūṟu* and, in Puṟam (heroic genre), *Puṟanāṉūṟu*, though the latter two especially contain much younger material. Further in linguistic and poetic development, but still rather close appear the Cēra anthologies *Aiṅkuṟunūṟu* (Akam) and *Patiṟṟuppattu* (Puṟam). The first indication of anthologisation is the former invocation stanza of the *Kuṟuntokai*, now counted as *Kuṟuntokai* 1, but in fact a very early form of devotional poem dedicated to Murukaṉ, perhaps from the late 5th century. Probably in the early 7th century, or at least definitely before the pervasive sectarian splits of the bhakti period, there is evidence for the first hyper-anthology containing all the six texts mentioned so far, that is, both Pāṇṭiya and Cēra, on the initiative of the Pāṇṭiyas: We find preserved a series of five invocation stanzas by the hand of Pāratampāṭiya Peruntēvaṉār, and the conjecture is reasonable that there was a sixth in the lost beginning of the *Patiṟṟuppattu*.

In parallel, but slightly later, the songs now contained in the second hyper-anthology, the *Pattuppāṭṭu*, developed, with new advances in poetics, morphology and lexicon, and a growing number of Sanskrit loans. Very late, and probably related rather to the later Pāṇṭiya resurrection of the earliest poetry than to the earlier literary production itself, come the last two anthologies that we know today as elements of the *Eṭṭuttokai*, that is, the *Kalittokai* and the *Paripāṭal*. The first references to the actual hyper-anthologies *Paṭṭuppāṭṭu* and *Eṭṭuttokai* are found in the grammatical commentary tradition from the 12th century onwards [for a detailed account, see Wilden 2014].

time	Text traditions					
	Pāṇṭiya, Cēra, Cōḻa		Cēra	Pāṇṭiya		Pāṇṭiya, Cēra, Cōḻa
	Akam	*Puṟam*	*Akam/Puṟam*	*Akam*	mixed	mixed
1.-3. c.	*Kuṟuntokai* *Naṟṟiṇai* *Akanāṉūṟu*	*Puṟa-nāṉūṟu*				
4. c.	↓	↓	*Aiṅkuṟunūṟu* *Patiṟṟuppattu*			*Neṭunalvāṭai* *Porunarāṟṟuppaṭai* *Ciṟupāṇāṟṟuppaṭai* *Perumpāṇāṟṟuppaṭai*
5. c.	↓ KT 1	↓				*Malaipaṭukaṭām* *Kuṟiñcippāṭṭu* *Paṭṭiṉappālai* *Mullaippāṭṭu* *Maturaikkāñci*
6. c.	↓	↓		*Kalittokai*	*Paripāṭal*	*Tirumurukāṟṟuppaṭai*
7. c.	*kaṭavuḷ vāḻttu*-s	→	→	→	?	
	Pāṇṭiya			Pāṇṭiya		Pāṇṭiya, Cēra, Cōḻa
12.c.	"*Eṭṭuttokai*"					"*Paṭṭuppāṭṭu*"

table of basic chronology of the *Caṅkam* corpus

Lists of Literary Works of the First Millennium CE

It is not easy to calculate the precise extent of the works listed below. Those in Āciriyam metre are simply counted by line, those in stanzas, that is, from Veṇpā onwards, are counted by stanza (that is, four or, exceptionally, two lines). But since the various metres range from two metrical feet to eight metrical feet per line and since moreover the works in mixed metres also contain Āciriyam passages of variable length regarded as stanzas, the count is very imprecise. Still, better some vague idea than no idea at all. The works included into text bodies belonging to the first millennium that were not composed within this time frame have been marked by square brackets.

Complete list of the *Eṭṭuttokai*

1. *Kuṟuntokai*   (402 poems, 2504 lines; no commentary)
2. *Naṟṟiṇai*   (400 poems, 4180 lines; no commentary)
3. *Akanāṉūṟu*   (401 poems, 7151 lines; anonymous comm. on AN 1-90)
4. *Puṟanāṉūṟu*   (400 poems, 5448 lines; anonymous comm. on PN 1-250)
5. *Aiṅkuṟunūṟu*   (501+ poems, 2163 lines; anonymous commentary)
6. *Patiṟṟuppattu* (80+ poems, 1711 lines; anonymous commentary)
7. *Kalittokai*   (150 poems, 4314 lines; comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar)
8. *Paripāṭal*   (22+ poems, 1833 lines; comm. by Parimēlaḻakar)

Complete list of the *Pattuppāṭṭu* (3552 lines)

1. *Tirumurukāṟṟuppaṭai*   (317 l.; comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar, Parimēlaḻakar, etc.)
2. *Porunarāṟṟuppaṭai*   (248 lines; comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar)
3. *Cirupaṇāṟṟuppaṭai*   (269 lines; comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar)
4. *Perumpāṇāṟṟuppaṭai*   (500 lines; comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar)
5. *Mullaippāṭṭu*   (103 lines; comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar)
6. *Maturaikkāñci*   (782 lines; comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar)

7. *Neṭunalvāṭai*	(188 lines; comm. by Naccinārkkiṉiyar)
8. *Kuṟiñcippāṭṭu*	(261 lines; comm. by Naccinārkkiṉiyar)
9. *Paṭṭiṉappālai*	(301 lines; comm. by Naccinārkkiṉiyar)
10. *Malaipaṭukaṭām*	(583 lines; comm. by Naccinārkkiṉiyar)

Complete List of *Patiṉeṉ Kīḻkkaṇakku*:

1. *Nālaṭiyār*	(didactic, 400 stanzas; comm. by Patumaṉār, Tarumaṉār, etc.)
2. *Nāṉmaṇikkaṭikai*	(didactic, anonymous comm.; 101 stanzas)
3. *Iṉṉānārpatu*	(didactic, anonymous comm.; 40 stanzas)
4. *Iṉiyavaiṉārpatu*	(didactic, anonymous comm.; 40 stanzas)
5. *Kārnārpatu*	(Akam, anonymous comm.; 40 stanzas)
6. *Kaḷavaḷiṉārpatu*	(Puṟam, anonymous comm.; 40 stanzas)
7. *Aintiṇaiyaimpatu*	(Akam, anonymous comm.; 50 stanzas)
8. *Aintiṇaiyeḻupatu*	(Akam, anonymous comm.; 69 stanzas)
9. *Tiṇaimoḻiyaimpatu*	(Akam, anonymous comm.; 50 stanzas)
10. *Tiṇaimālainūṟṟaimpatu*	(Akam, anonymous comm.; 154 stanzas)
11. *Tirukkuṟaḷ*	(didactic, comm. by Maṇakkuṭavar, Parimēlaḻakar, etc.; 1330 couplets)
12. *Ācārakkōvai*	(didactic, anonymous comm.; 100 stanzas)
13. *Paḻamoḻi*	(didactic, anonymous comm.; 400 stanzas)
14. *Ciṟupañcamūlam*	(didactic, anonymous comm.; 102 stanzas)
15. *Mutumoḻikkāñci*	(didactic, anonymous comm.; 10 stanzas)
16. *Ēlāti*	(didactic, anonymous comm.; 80 stanzas)
17. *Kainnilai*	(Akam, anonymous comm.; 60 stanzas)
18. *Tirikaṭukam*	(didactic, anonymous comm., 100 stanzas)
[19. *Iṉṉilai*	(didactic; 45 stanzas) probably spurious]

Complete list of the *Paṉṉiru Tirumuṟai*

TM I-III:	1. Campantar:	*Tēvāram* (385 decades)
TM IV-VI:	2. Appar:	*Tēvāram* (312 decades)
TM VII:	3. Cuntarar:	*Tēvāram* (101 decades)
TM VIII:	4. Māṇikkavācakar:	*Tiruvācakam* (652 stanzas + 646 lines),
		Tirukkōvaiyār (400 stanzas; comm. by Pērāciriyar)
TM IX:	5. Tirumāḷikaittēvar,	
	6. Karuvūrttēvar,	
	7. Pūnturutti Nampikāṭanampi,	
	8. Kaṇṭarāttittar,	
	9. Vēṇāṭṭaṭikaḷ,	
	10. Tiruvāḻiyamutaṉār,	
	11. Puruṭōttamanampi,	
	12. Cētirāyar:	*Tiruvicaippā*
	13. Cēntaṉār:	*Tiruvicaippā, Tiruppallāṇṭu* (301 stanzas)
TM X:	14. Tirumūlar:	*Tirumantiram, Tantiram* 1-9 (3000 stanzas)
TM XI:	15. Tiruvālavāyuṭaiyar:	*Tirumukappācuram* (12 lines)
	16. Kāraikkāl Ammaiyār:	*Aṟputat Tiruvantāti, Tiruviraṭṭaimaṇimālai, Tiruvalaṅkāṭṭu Patikam-s* (143 stanzas)
	17. Aiyaṭikaḷ Kāṭavar Kōṉ:	*Kṣētirattiruveṇpā* (24 stanzas)
	18. Cēramāṉ Perumāḷ:	*Poṉvaṇṇattantāti, Tirukkayilāyañāṉavulā, Ārūrmummaṇikkōvai* (135 stanzas + 190 lines)

19. Nakkīratēvar: *Kayilaipāti Kaḷattipātiyantāti,*
                     Tiruvīṅkōymalai, Eḻuppatu,
                     Tiruvalañcuḻi Mummaṇikkōvai,
                     Tiruveḻukūṟṟirukkai, Peruntēvapāṇi,
                     Kōpappiracātam, Kār Eṭṭu, Pōṟṟit
                     Tirukkaliveṇpā,
                     Tirumurukāṟṟuppaṭai,
                     Tirukaṇṇappatēvar Tirumaṟam (189
                     stanzas + 725 lines)

20. Kallātatēvar: *Tirukkaṇṇappatēvar Tirumaṟam* (38
                     lines)

21. Kapilatēvar: *Mūttanāyaṉār*
                     Tiruviraṭṭaimaṇimālai,
                     Civaperumāṉ
                     Tiruviraṭṭaimaṇimālai,
                     Civaperumāṉ Tiruvantāti (157
                     stanzas)

22. Paraṇatēvar: *Civaperumāṉ Tiruvantāti* (101
                     stanzas)

23. Iḷamperumāṉ Aṭikaḷ: *Civaperumāṉ Tirumummaṇikkōvai*
                     (30 stanzas)

24. Atirāvaṭikaḷ: *Mūttapiḷḷayār Tirumummaṇikkōvai*
                     (23 stanzas)

25. Paṭṭiṉattup Piḷḷaiyār: *Kōyil Nāṉmaṇimālai, Tirukkaḻumala*
                     Mummaṇikkōvai, Tiruviṭaimarutūr
                     Mummaṇikkōvai,
                     Tiruvēkampamuṭaiyār Tiruvantāti,
                     Tiruvoṟṟiyūr Orupā Orupatu (192
                     stanzas)

[26. Nampi Āṇṭār Nampi: *Tirunaraiyūr Vināyakar*
                     Tiruviraṭṭaimaṇimālai, Kōyil
                     Tiruppaṇṇiyar Viruttam, Tiruttoṇṭar
                     Tiruvantāti, Āḷuṭaiya Piḷḷaiyār
                     Tiruvantāti, Āḷuṭaiya Piḷḷaiyār

		Tiruccaṇpaiviruttam Āḻuṭaiya
		Piḷḷaiyār Mummaṇikkōvai Āḻuṭaiya
		Piḷḷaiyār Tiruvulāmālai, Āḻuṭaiya
		Piḷḷaiyār Tirukkalampakam,
		Āḻuṭaiya Piḷḷaiyār Tiruttokai,
		Tirunāvukkaracu Tēvar
		Tiruvēkātaca Mālai (369 st./211 l.)
TM XII:	27. Cēkkiḻār:	*Tiruttoṇṭar purāṇam =*
		Periyapurāṇam (3634 st.)]

Complete List of the *Nālāyirat Tivyappirapantam*

1. Poykaiyāḻvār:	*First Tiruvantāti* (100 stanzas)
2. Pūtattāḻvār:	*Second Tiruvantāti* (100 stanzas)
3. Pēyāḻvār:	*Third Tiruvantāti* (100 stanzas)
4. Tirumaḻicaiyā.:	*Tiruccantaviruttam, Nāṉmukam Tiruvantāti* (220 stanzas)
5. Nammāḻvār:	*Tiruviruttam, Tiruvāciriyam, Periyatiruvantāti, Tiruvāymoḻi* (1293 stanzas)
6. Periyāḻvār:	*Periyāḻvār Tirumoḻi* (473 stanzas)
7. Āṇṭāḷ:	*Tiruppāvai, Nācciyār Tirumoḻi* (173 stanzas)
8. Tirumaṅkaiyā.:	*Periyatirumoḻi, Tirukuṟuntāṇṭakam, Tiruneṭuntāṇṭakam, Tiruveḻukūṟṟirukkai, Ciṟiyatirumaṭal, Periyatirumaṭal* (1152 stanzas)
9. Kulacēkaraṉā.:	*Perumāḷ Tirumoḻi* (104 stanzas)
10. Tiruppāṇā.:	*Amalaṉātippirāṉ* (10 stanzas)
11.Toṇṭaraṭipoṭiyā:	*Tirumālai, Tirupaḷḷiyeḻucci* (55 stanzas)
12. Madhurakaviyā.:	*Kaṇṇinuṇ Ciṟuttāmpu* (11 stanzas)
	[13. *Irāmānujanūṟṟantāti* (108 stanzas)]

List of first-millennium "Epics" = *Aimperuṅkāppiyam*

1. *Cilappatikāram* (5246 lines; anon. comm., comm. by Aṭiyārkkunallār)
2. *Maṇimēkalai* (4856 lines)
3. *Cīvaka Cintāmaṇi* (3145 stanzas; comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar)
4. *Vaḷaiyāpati* [lost, except for some quotations]
5. *Kuṇṭalakēci* [lost, except for some quotations]

Peruṅkatai (ca. 16 000 lines; incomplete)

Cuḷāmaṇi (2130 stanzas)

Nīlakēci (894 stanzas; comm. by Camayativākarar)

Further miscellaneous poetic works of the first millennium

Pāṇṭikkōvai (350 stanzas)

Muttoḷḷāyiram (107 stanzas)

Nantikkalampakam (113 stanzas)

Pāratāveṇpā (339 stanzas)

[*Kallāṭam* (100 poems = 3337 lines)]

GRAMMAR

So far no comprehensive grammar of classical Tamil has been published. Among the works dealing also with pre-modern morphology Beythan 1943 and Andronov 1969 can be named, the former being especially useful for its excellent paradigms of the verbal classes, but written in German.[1] There are several grammars restricted to the *Caṅkam* corpus, the most voluminous being Rajam 1992 (without index). Specialised even further (on the *Patiṟṟuppattu*) but dealing extensively with the old verb forms is Agesthialingom 1979. Another sub-corpus (that of the poet Kapilar) is treated by Lehmann 1994, again in German. For a brief outline of Old Tamil language, see the article Lehmann 1998. None of them treats the far more important questions of syntax. One further drawback of all the existing grammars is that they had to rely on preliminary text editions with many forms edited out as dialectal or simply "wrong". A comprehensive grammar based at last on the forthcoming critical editions is under preparation in Pondicherry. The goal of the present work, however, is to give an overview of both morphology and syntax of the Tamil language of the first millennium for didactic purposes into the hands of students.

---

[1] Although conceived rather as a manual on later pre-modern formal Tamil, many old forms are included in Beythan's book, if in footnotes, and his extensive remarks on syntax remain useful to this day.

Script and Phonetics

0.1 Table of Letters

The Classical Tamil alphabet is not different from the modern one, except for one special rare letter called *āytam* (mostly used in sandhi). It is, like most Indian scripts, of an abugida type, that is, inherent in the consonant is the letter அ *a* unless cancelled by a dot above the letter (*puḷḷi*). All other vowels are added to the consonant letter either with special characters or in consonant-vowel ligatures. The stand-alone vowel characters are restricted to the beginning of a verse. Except for gemination and nasals, consonant clusters do not exist. Single consonants are voiced if intervocalic or preceded by a nasal, consonants at the beginning of a word and double consonants are unvoiced.

Vowels

அ	ஆ	இ	ஈ	உ	ஊ	எ	ஏ	ஐ	ஒ	ஓ	ஔ
a	ā	i	ī	u	ū	e	ē	ai	o	ō	au

Consonants

guttural:	க் k	ங் ṅ				
palatal:	ச் c	ஞ் ñ				
retroflex:	ட் ṭ	ண் ṇ	ள் ḷ			
dental:	த் t	ந் n				
labial:	ப் p	ம் m				
semi-vowel:	ய் y	ர் r	ல் l	வ் v		
alveolar:	ற் ṟ	ன் ṉ				
retroflex approximant:	ழ் ḻ					
āytam:	ஃ ḵ					

0.2 Sandhi in Classical Tamil[2]

Sandhi in Classical Tamil is a complicated and controversial issue, not only because much of it allows for alternatives, but also because there are in fact several sets of rules (the earliest from the *Tolkāppiyam Eḻuttatikāram*), and it is often not clear who is following which set. In under-marked Tamil palm-leaf notation it is sandhi in interaction with metre that helps resolve a good number of ambiguities in the script, while at the same time retaining others that will be lost in more modern notation. The most notable case is the oblique form in -இன் -*iṉ*, rendered in modern editions invariably as the locative -இல் -*il*, in sandhi both -இன் -*iṉ*. That is one reason why scribes and early editors painstakingly followed the rules, although it is not always clear which rules exactly. Text editions from the 1940s onwards have gradually done away with sandhi, up to present-day editions which keep just the bare-bone modern Tamil prose rules. [For earlier lists, see Andronov 1969, §§ 15-23, and Beythan 1943, §§ 21-28.]

The first rule that confuses students is that no word, or, properly speaking, no metrical foot (*cīr*), is allowed to begin with a vowel, except at the very beginning of a poem. For that reason the final consonant of any word at the end of a metrical foot is combined with a vowel beginning the next word/*cīr*.

Vowel sandhi

Final அ, ஆ, உ, ஊ, ஒ, ஓ *a*, *ā*, *u*, *ū*, *o*, *ō* (back vowels) both within the word and at word boundaries insert the glide -வ- -*v*- before any

---

2 This list is an elaboration of the original one made by Sascha Ebeling for the first CTSS.

other vowel: சேர்ப்ப வோம்புமதி *cērppa-v-ōmpumati*, "Man from the coast, beware!"

Final இ, ஈ, எ, ஏ, ஐ *i, ī, e, ē, ai* (front vowels) both within the word and at word boundaries insert the glide *-y-* before any other vowel: கொன்றை யிணர் *koṉṟai-y-iṇar*, "cluster of laburnum".

Elision of the final vowel is mostly restricted to final -உ *-u*, counted as over-short (metrically discounted) unless at the end of a two-syllable word with short vowel and single consonant (திரு *tiru*, "Śrī"). The over-short final *-u* is elided before any vowel: வண்டு இனம் **>** வண்டினம் *vaṇṭu + iṉam = vaṇṭiṉam*, "swarm of bees".

Overshort -உ *-u* followed by ய்- *y-* becomes over-short (metrically discounted) இ- *i-*:

வெள் கோட்டு யானை *veḷ + kōṭṭu + yāṉai* **>** வெண்கோட் டியானை *veṇkōṭṭiyāṉai* "white tusked elephant"[3]

Exceptions are made for two-syllable adjectives ending in *-u*, although not regarded as over-short in the grammatical tradition. Such an adjective if followed by a vowel has mostly two options, namely either lengthening its first vowel or doubling the consonant:

சிறு இலை *ciṟu + ilai* > சிற்றிலை *ciṟṟilai* or சீறிலை *cīṟilai*, "small leaf"[4], but only அரு இரவு *aru + iravu* > ஆரிரவு *āriravu*, "difficult night".

The lengthening of the vowel also applies to some numerals and to the sociative suffix *-oṭu*:

ஒரு பெயர் *oru peyar*, "one name", but ஒரூர் *ōrūr*, "one village"

---

[3] A rare and probably hypercorrect parallel is கான் *kāṉ* + யாறு *yāṟu* > கானியாறு *kāṉiyāṟu*, "forest river".

[4] A rare additional possibility is சிறியிலை *ciṟiyilai*, possibly a precursor of the modern adjectival form சிறிய *ciṟiya*.

எழு பிறப்பு *eḻu piṟappu*, "seven births", but ஏழுலகு *ēḻulaku*, "seven worlds"

பெடையொடு சேவல் *peṭaiyoṭu cēval*, "the rooster with [its] female", but பிணையோ டிரலை *piṇaiyō ṭiralai* ~ *piṇaiyōṭ_u iralai*, "the Iralai stag with [its] doe"

Exceptions are made for some monosyllabic adjectives and some pronouns:

செம் அடி *cem + aṭi* > சேவடி *cēvaṭi*, "red foot"

செம் இழை *cem + iḻai* > சேயிழை *cēyiḻai*, "red jewel"

வெம் வரை *vem + varai* > வெவ்வரை *vevvarai*, "hot mountain"

அ- இடை *a- + iṭai* > ஆயிடை *āyiṭai*, "in between"

அது -ஏ *atu +-ē* > ஆதே *ātē* or அஃதே *aḵtē*, "that"

An exceptional vowel elision is made with an optative followed by any form of the quotative verb என்னுதல் *ennutal*, "to say". The form வருகென்றாள் *varukenṟāḷ* may either be understood as வருகு என்றாள் *varuku enṟāḷ*, "she said 'I will come'", or as வருக என்றாள் *varuka enṟāḷ*, "she said 'you may come'".

Exceptional cases for -அ *-a* merging with அ- *a-* into -அ- *-a-* are found in some particle combinations, such as மன்றம்ம *manṟamma* (for மன்ற *manṟa* + அம்ம *amma*) and in *peyareccam* compounds with the comparative stem அ(ன்)னை- *a(n)nai-*, "to be like that", as in மறந்தனையேன் *maṟanta + anaiyēn*, "I am like someone who has forgotten".

Consonant sandhi

The nasal ம் *m* followed by a consonant assimilates within the word and at word boundaries into the class nasal:

m + k > ṅk பெரும் குன்று *perum+ kuṉṟu >* பெருங்குன்று
peruṅkuṉṟu,"big hill"

m + c > ñc அம் சிலம்பு *am + cilampu >* அஞ்சிலம்பு *añcilampu*,
"pretty anklet"

m + t > nt   குறும் தொகை *kuṟum + tokai >* குறுந்தொகை
                kuṟuntokai, "anthology of short [poems]"

In compounds or for a case relation, final -ம் *-m* may be substituted by the gemination of the following consonant:

m + k/c/t/p > kk/cc/tt/pp   கமலம் கண் *kamalam + kaṇ >*
                                   கமலக்கண் *kamalakkaṇ* "lotus eye"

                                   நம் துறந்து *nam + tuṟantu >*

                                   நத்துறந்து *nattuṟantu*, "having
                                   abandoned us"

Similarly, in compounds or for a case relation, final -ம் *-m* may be dropped before வ்- *v-* and ய்- *y-*: புகர்முக வேழம் *pukar muka(m) vēḻam*, "elephant bull with a spotted face", கான யானை *kāṉa(m) yāṉai*, "forest elephant".

Final -ம் *-m* followed by a nasal, ம்- *m-*, ந்- *n-*, ஞ்- *ñ-*, is simply dropped, unless -ம் *-m* is at the end of a monosyllabic word with a short vowel, in which case it is assimilated to the class nasal.

m + m > m   நாமம் மாறும் *nāmam + māṟum >* நாமமாறும்
                   nāmamāṟum "the name will change"
m + n > n   மரம் நீண்டது *maram + nīṇṭatu >* மரநீண்டது
                   maranīṇṭatu "the tree grew long"
m + m > mm   செம் மண் *cem + maṇ >* செம்மண் *cemmaṇ* "red
                   earth"
m + n > nn   வெம் நீர் *vem + nīr >* வெந்நீர் *vennīr* "hot water"
m + ñ > ññ   தம் ஞாண் *tam + ñāṇ >* தஞ்ஞாண் *taññāṇ* "their
                   string"

The two further nasals possible in final position are retroflex -ண்
-*ṇ* and alveolar -ன் -*ṉ*.[5]

Word-final -ண் -*ṇ* followed by த்- *t-* or ந்- *n-* causes assimilation:

ṇ + *t* > *ṇṭ*   தண் துறை *taṇ* + *tuṟai* > தண்டுறை *taṇṭuṟai*,
                                "cool ghat"

ṇ + *n* > *ṇṇ*   கண் நீர் *kaṇ* + *nīr* > கண்ணீர் *kaṇṇīr*, "tears"

The letter -ண் -*ṇ* followed by க்- *k-*, ச்- *c-*, or ப்- *p-* inside a word
must become -ட் -*ṭ*, thus forming the clusters -ட்க்- -*ṭk-*, -ட்ச்- -*ṭc-*,
-ட்ப்- -*ṭp-*, the same is optional at a word boundary: பெரும் பூண்
சென்னி *perum-pūṇ ceṉṉi* > பெரும்பூட் சென்னி *perumpūṭ ceṉṉi*,
"Ceṉṉi with large ornaments"; கடும் கண் பன்றி *kaṭum kaṇ paṉṟi* <
கடுங்கட் பன்றி *kaṭuṅkaṭ paṉṟi*, "fierce-eyed hog".

Word-final -ன் -*ṉ* followed by ந்- *n-* causes assimilation and is then
dropped, unless at the end of a short monosyllabic word with a short
vowel:

ṉ + *n* > *ṉ*   தோழியின் நெஞ்சம் *tōḻiyiṉ* + *neñcam* > தோழியி
                                னெஞ்சம் *tōḻiyi ṉeñcam*, "the friend's heart"

ṉ + *n* > *ṉṉ*   என் நெஞ்சம் *eṉ* + *neñcam* > என்னெஞ்சம் *eṉṉeñcam*,
                                "my heart"

Word-final -ன் -*ṉ* followed by க்- *k-*, ச்- *c-*, த்- *t-*, ப்- *p-*
occasionally may change:

ṉ + *k* > *ṟk*   அறத்தின் காக்கும் *aṟattiṉ* + *kākkum* > அறத்திற்
                                காக்கும் *aṟattiṟ kākkum*, "that is guarded by
                                dharma", but நாடன் கேண்மை *nāṭaṉ kēṇmai*,
                                "intimacy with the man from the land"

---

[5] An exception is the *Caṅkam* word *veriṉ*, "back".

n + *t* > *nr̠* or *r̠r̠*	என் தோழி *en̠* + *tōl̠i* > என்றோழி *en̠r̠ōl̠i*, "my friend", நின் துறந்து *nin̠* + *tur̠antu* > நிற்றுறந்து *nir̠r̠urantu*, "abandoning you"
n̠ + *p* > *r̠p*	இறும்பின் பாம்பு *ir̠umpin̠ pāmpu* > இறும்பிற் பாம்பு *ir̠umpir̠ pāṃpu*, "snake in the thicket", but தலைவன் பாங்கன் *talaivan̠ pāṅkan̠*, "the friend of the hero", துன்பம் *tun̠pam*, "sorrow"

Final -ய் -*y* can cause ம்- *m-* to geminate: பொய் மொழி *poy* + *mol̠i* > பொய்ம்மொழி *poymmol̠i*, "false word"

Final -ல் -*l* can change into alveolar nasal or stop in quite an astonishing number of circumstances, many of them optional.

l + *k* > *r̠k*	திரள்கால் குவளை *tiraḷ-kāl kuvaḷai* > திரள்காற் குவளை *tiraḷ-kār̠ kuvaḷai*, "round-stemmed blue water-lily"
l + *c* > *r̠c* or *n̠c*	இல் செறிப்பு *il* + *cer̠ippu* > இற்செறிப்பு *ir̠cer̠ippu*, "being confined in the house"; மெல் சாயல் *mel* + *cāyal* > மென்சாயல் *men̠cāyal*, "soft beauty"
l + *p* > *r̠p* or *n̠p*	நுதல் பசப்பு *nutal* + *pacappu* > நுதற்பசப்பு *nutar̠ pacappu*, "pallor of the forehead", வல் புலம் *val* + *pulam* < வன்புலம் *van̠pulam*, "hard soil"
l + *t* > *r̠* or *n̠r̠* or *r̠r̠* or *kr̠*	அழல் துடங்கினாள் *al̠al* + *tuṭaṅkin̠aḷ* > அழ றுடங்கினள் *al̠ar̠uṭaṅkin̠aḷ*, "she started to cry"; நல் தாய் *nal* + *tāy* > நற்றாய் *nar̠r̠āy* "real mother"; அல் திணை *al* + *tiṇai* > அஃதிணை *aḳtiṇai*, "non-class" = neuter
l + *m* > *n̠m*	சொல் மாலை *col* + *mālai* > சொன்மாலை *con̠mālai*, "word garland"

l + *n* > *ṉ* or *ṉṉ*   நுதல் நீவி *nutal nīvi* > நுதனீவி *nutaṉīvi*, "stroking the forehead"; நல் நகர் *nal* + *nakar* > நன்னகர் *naṉṉakar*, "good mansion"

Final -ள் -*ḷ* changes into its class nasal or stop within a word or compound and optionally at word boundaries:

ḷ + *k* > *ṭk* or *ṇk*   மகள் *makaḷ* + -கு -*ku* > மகட்கு *makaṭku*, "to the daughter"; வெள் குடை *veḷ* + *kuṭai* > வெண்குடை *veṇkuṭai*, "white parasol"; but வருந்தினள் கொல்லோ *varuntiṉaḷ-kollō*, "did she suffer?"

ḷ + *c* > *ṭc* or *ṇc*   ஒள் சுடர் *oḷ* + *cuṭar* < ஒண்சுடர் *oṇcuṭar*, bright glow"

ḷ + *p* > *ṭp* or *ṇp*   கேட்ப *kēṭpa*, inf. of கேள்-தல் *kēḷ-tal*, "to hear"; மகள் போக்கிய தாய் *makaḷ* + *pōkkiya tāy* > மகட்போக்கிய தாய் *makaṭpōkkiya tāy*, "the mother who had let her daughter go"; but மீன்கொள் பரதவர் *mīṉ koḷ paratavar*, "fish-taking fishermen"; ஒண்பழம் *oṇpaḻam*, "bright fruit"

ḷ + *t* > *ṭ* or *ṭṭ*   ஒளிறு வாள் தானை *oḷiṟu vāḷ* + *tāṉai* > ஒளிறுவாட் டானை *oḷiṟuvāṭ ṭāṉai*, "an army with shining swords"; நாள் தொறும் *nāḷ* + *tōṟum* > நாடோறும் *nāṭōṟum* "daily"

ḷ + *m* > *ṇm*   பைய்யுள் மாலை *paiyyuḷ* + *mālai* > பைய்யுண் மாலை *paiyyuṇ mālai*, "sorrowful evening"

ḷ + *n* > *ṇ* or *ṇṇ*   தெள் நீர் *teḷ* + *nīr* > தெண்ணீர் *teṇṇīr*, "clear water"; வாள் நுதல் *vāḷ nutal* > வாணுதல் *vāṇutal*, "bright forehead"

Consonant gemination

க் *k*, ச் *c*, த் *t*, ப் *p* undergo gemination:

- after the accusative suffix -ஐ *-ai*.

- after the dative suffix -(உக்)கு *-(uk)ku*.

- after -உ *-u* preceded by a double consonant (as in the oblique case).

- after the demonstrative clitics அ- *a-*, இ- *i-*, உ- *u-* and after எ- *e-* (also after இந்த *inta*, அந்த *anta*, எந்த *enta*).

- after -அ *-a* of the infinitive.

- after -இ *-i* of the absolutive (including the forms ஆய் *āy* and போய் *pōy*).

- after -ஆ *-ā* of the positive absolutive:
(கண்புதையயாக் குறுகி *kaṇputaiyā-k-kuṟuki*, "nearing [her], covering [her] eyes" AN 9.21).

- after -ஆ *-ā* of the negative *peyareccam* (relative participle):
முதிராத்திங்கள் *mutirā-t-tinkaḷ*, "immature moon", AN KV.11.

- after monosyllabic words ending in a long vowel.

- in compounds (of *karmadhāraya* or *genitive-tatpuruṣa* kind) after mono- and disyllabic neuter nouns ending in a vowel or -ய் *-y*, -ர் *-r*, -ழ் *-ḻ*: வீதிக்கதவு *vīti-k-katavu* "street door", அமர்க்கண் *amar-k-kaṇ*, "beautiful eyes", கீழ்க்கணக்கு *kīḻ-k-kaṇakku*, "minor series".

Gemination does *not* occur:

- after a finite verb form.

[- after -ஆ *-ā* of the negative absolutive:

    உண்ணாபோனான் *uṇṇā-pōṉāṉ* "without having eaten, he went off".][6]

- after a vocative form.

- after a verbal root.

- after an imperative singular (= verbal root).

- after the clitics -எ *-ē*, -ஒ *-ō*, -ஆ *-ā*.

- after the (declension) endings -இலிருந்து *-iliruntu*, -ஒடு *-oṭu*, -இனின்று *-iṉiṉṟu*, -உடைய *-uṭaiya*.

- after the pronouns இது *itu*, அது *atu*, எது *etu*, இவை *ivai*, அவை *avai*, எவை *evai*, நீ nī.

- after என்ன *eṉṉa*, எத்தனை *ettaṉai*, எல்லா *ellā*, பல *pala*, சில *cila*.

---

[6] This beautiful rule does not seem to conform with reality; a spot check in *Akanāṉūṟu* and *Naṟṟiṇai* revealed that there is about an even distribution of gemination and non-gemination.

NON-VERB WORD CLASSES

Old Tamil knows three stages of noun inflection for marking case relations. The first stage is the zero mark that may correspond to the nominative of Indo-Aryan systems, which is used for the subject. But since Early Old Tamil prefers to denote case relation by word order, zero marking leaves room for any other case-relationship, too. The second stage is the oblique minimally marked by gemination of the final consonant, by an oblique stem in -த்து *-ttu* for words ending in -ம் *-m*, or by doubling of the last consonant (mostly for words ending in -டு/-று *-ṭu/-ṟu*), or by the oblique suffix -இன் *-iṉ*. The suffix -இன் *-iṉ* may also be added (as a sort of double oblique mark), to any of the others.[7] This marks a case other than nominative and is liberally employed.[8] The third stage, then, is the actual explicit marking for case, partly with the help of suffixes, partly with the help of postpositions. For some cases the fluidity is enormous, and some are hardly ever marked.

1.1 Nouns: types and declension

1.1.1 Cases/Non-marking of Cases

zero = nom.

(voc. = nom. or loss of ending in m.sg.: நாடன் > நாட or

நாடா *nāṭaṉ* > *nāṭa* or *nāṭā* "O man from the land")[9]

---

[7] Another possible place holder for the case suffix in metrical texts is the oblique of the 3rd person personal and reflexive pronoun தன்/தம் *taṉ/tam*: அரசன் தன்னை *aracaṉ taṉṉai*, "the king (acc.)".

[8] This was never conceptualised in the Tamil grammatical tradition because already the *Tolkāppiyam* implements the Sanskrit case system of seven cases in order to describe Tamil.

[9] Nouns in -ஐ *-ai* may have a vocative in -ஆய் *-āy*: அன்னை *aṉṉai* > அன்னாய் *aṉṉāy*, "o mother"; later the final syllable may be lengthened: தோழி *tōḻi* > தோழீ *tōḻī* or தோழீஇ *tōḻīi*, "o friend", நுதல் *nutal* > நுதால் *nutāl* "o [you with a] forehead", பேதைகள் *pētaikaḷ* > பேதைகாள் *pētaikāḷ*, "o foolish girls".

oblique   -இன் *-in*: நிலவு > நிலவின் *nilavu > nilavin*,
               "moonlight"

               -த்து *-ttu*: மரம் > மரத்து/(மரத்தின்) *maram > marattu/
               (marattin)*, "tree"

               gemination: கோடு > கோட்டு/(கோட்டின்), *kōṭu >
               kōṭṭu/(kōṭṭin)*, "tusk", ஆறு > ஆற்று/(ஆற்றின்) *āṟu >
               āṟṟu/(āṟṟin)*, "path, river"

cases   dative -(உக்)கு *-(uk)ku*

               locative -ஆன் *-āṉ*, (-இல் *-il*)[10], -அகத்து *-akattu*, -இடை
               -iṭai, -கண் *-kaṇ*, -வயின் *-vayiṉ*, -மருங்கின் *-maruṅkiṉ*,
               -முதல் *-mutal*, -தலை *-talai*, -மாட்டு *-māṭṭu*, -உள் *-uḷ*;
               -தேஎத்து *-tēettu*, -மேன *-mēṉa*, (etc.)

               sociative -ஒடு *-oṭu* / (-உடன் *-uṭaṉ*)

               instrumental -ஆல் *-āl* / -ஆன் *-āṉ*; -ஒடு *-oṭu*

               accusative -ஐ *-ai*

               genitive -அது *-atu*; possessive also: -உடை *-uṭai* (later
               -உடைய *-uṭaiya*) / -கெழு *-keḻu*

               (ablative = comparison -இன் *-in*[11]; later -நின்று *-niṉṟu*)

The only case marked fairly regularly is the dative, corresponding to the indirect object. Additional functions of the dative are the dative of direction and the frequent possessive still found in modern Tamil (மாற்கு ஆள் *māṟku āḷ*, "servant of Māl").

---

[10] The official locative postposition *-il* (derived from the noun *il*, "house"), ubiquitously printed by modern editors where, in fact, due to sandhi it could also be interpreted as the oblique in -இன் *-in*, is in fact a late-comer in the texts, as can be seen from the fact that the three old Akam anthologies (KT, NA, AN) contain less than a dozen definitive instances.

[11] Comparative means here a simple comparative particle, often combined with others such as அன்ன *aṉṉa*: காலின் சென்று *kāliṉ ceṉṟu*, "gone like the wind" (NA 249.1), கொழுந்தின் அன்ன *koḻuntiṉ aṉṉa*, "like a tendril" (AN 9.2).

Locative is frequently marked, either by its case suffix or by a large number of postpositions, the majority of which also occur as regular nouns with a clear semantic meaning. Among the remaining cases sociative is the only one found more often than occasionally; besides by -ஒடு *-oṭu* (in sandhi before vowel -ஓடு *-ōṭ$_u$*) it can also be expressed by -உடன் *-uṭaṉ*. Instrumental, for instrument and for reason, may be marked in -ஆல் *-āl* or -ஆன் *-āṉ* (frequently falling together in sandhi); rarely a sociative suffix has instrumental meaning and vice versa. Accusative -ஐ *-ai*, the case of the direct object, is rarely marked (which is still true in modern Tamil for the inanimate direct object). One reason for marking it is deviation from the regular word order of Subject – Object. The genitive, too, is rarely marked, and the ablative has entered the official Tamil case system only because it is there in Sanskrit and is predominantly represented by the comparative suffix -இன் *-iṉ*. Late in the first millennium there is an occasional *viṉaiyeccam* நின்று *-niṉru* freezing into a postposition that expresses the idea of moving away from something (literally "after having stayed in x"), followed by the modern -இலிருந்து *-iliruntu* based on similar semantics ("having been in x").

In a passive construction the agent may be marked by an instrumental (late: TVM 8.8.11.2f. திருமாலால் │ அருளப்பட்ட சடகோபன் *tirumālāl │ aruḷappaṭṭa caṭakōpaṉ*, "Caṭakōpaṉ who is graced by Tirumāl"), and with a neuter singular verbal noun the agent may be marked by a dative, possibly developed out of the possessive dative (Poy 10.1-3 மண்ணும் மலையும் மறி கடலும் மாருதமும் │ விண்ணும் விழுங்கியது ...ஆழியாய்க்கு *maṇṇum malaiyum maṟi kaṭalum mārutamum │ viṇṇum viḻuṅkiyatu … āḻiyāykku*, "Earth, mountain, churning sea, wind and sky were swallowed … by you with the discus").

1.1.2. Types of Nouns – List of Nominal Suffixes

Noun formation and the types of suffixes employed are an understudied area; both morphological and semantic studies are as good as absent. The only list of suffixes in the available grammars is found in Zvelebil 1967. The list below is without doubt incomplete, and explanations of use are rather simplistic. As far as genders are concerned, Tamil distinguishes only "high-class" (*uyar-tiṇai*), that is, animate, as male and female, and "low-class" (*akṟiṇai*), that is, everything else including abstract nouns, as neuter. The notion of being male or female is generally expressed by the pronominal secondary suffixes (see below), but a few nouns have special masculine or feminine endings.

root nouns	Very common are nominal stems that are identical to verbal roots: அணி *aṇi*, "to adorn/adornment"; சுடர் *cuṭar*, "to glow/glow" A minimal modification is the occasional verbal root with lengthened vowel: பெறு *peṟu*, "to obtain" > பேறு *pēṟu*, "benefit"

primary suffixes:

-உ/வு *-(v)u*	forming neuter nouns often freely variable with *-am*
-அம் *-am*	நெஞ்சு/நெஞ்சம் *neñcu/neñcam*, "heart"
-ஆ *-ā*	often freely variable with *-u*: நிலவு/நிலா *nilavu/nilā*, "moonlight"
-அன் *-aṉ*	distinction (sometimes free varitation with -அம் *-am*): நலம் *nalam*, "goodness, beauty", but நலன் *nalaṉ*, "virginity"
(-அர் *-ar*	forming adjectives: காமர் *kāmar*, "desirable")

-உள் -*uḷ*   forming neuter nouns; less productive: செய்யுள் *ceyyuḷ*, "metrical text", பைய்யுள் *paiyyuḷ*, "sorrow", விளையுள் *viḷaiyuḷ*, "produce" (NA 45.9)

-வி/ச்சி/த்தி -*vi/cci/tti*   forming feminine nouns: புலைச்சி *pulaicci* "washer woman", பணைத்தோளி *paṇaittōḷi*, "she with bamboo shoulders"

-இ -*i*   forming masculine agent nouns: ஏந்தி *ēnti* "holder" (in bhakti)

-வு/(ப்)பு -*vu/-(p)pu*   forming abstract nouns from verbal roots: செய்வு/செய்பு *ceyvu/ceypu*, "doing"

-வை -*vai*   forming abstract nouns from verbal roots: அளவை *aḷavai*, "measure"

-மை -*mai*   forming nouns (in fact to tradition the basic form from which adjectives are derived): பெருமை *perumai*, "greatness", அருமை *arumai*, "difficulty", but also used on verbal roots ஆண்மை *āṇmai*, "courage", உடைமை *uṭaimai*, "possession"

-(க்)கை -*(k)kai*   செய்கை *ceykai*, "action", வாழ்க்கை *vāḻkkai*, "livelihood"

-(ச்)சி -*(c)ci*   புணர்ச்சி *puṇarcci*, "union"

-(த்)தி -*(t)ti*   செய்தி *ceyti*, "action"

-அல்/(த்)தல் -*al/-(t)tal* forming verbal nouns[12]: செயல்/செய்தல் *ceyal/ ceytal*, "to do", புணரல்/புணர்தல்

---

[12] The verbal noun in -தல் -*tal* is the traditional form used to refer to a verb in the grammatical tradition. Note that the short form in -அல் -*al* is homophonous with the negative root imperative: செயல் *ceyal* can be "to do" or "don't do".

> *puṇaral/ puṇartal*, "to unite", but புணர்த்தல்
> *puṇarttal*, "to bring together"

secondary suffixes:

The main type of secondary suffix is the so-called pronominal suffix usually alternating between short and long vowels in almost all cases. In noun formation they are used for masculine, feminine and honorific in the type of pronominalised nouns that are lexicalised: அந்தணன் *antaṇaṉ*, "brahmin", வினைவர் *viṉaivar*, "workers"; the feminine often rather adopts the ending -இ *-i* for this type of noun: கள்வன் *kaḷvaṉ* "robber", but கள்வி *kaḷvi*, "female robber". Note that also participial nouns are frequently lexicalised (cf. the introduction to Verbs below).

It is also with their help that singular and plural are marked. Marking of plural is optional, especially in the case of the neuter. Old Tamil does not distinguish in the high-class, that is, with animate nouns, between honorific and plural; the suffix -அர்/-ஆர் *-ar/-ār* denotes both and the decision has to be made by context. From bhakti times onwards the modern plural suffix -கள் *-kaḷ* filters in, first with neuters, then also with animate beings. For a long time it was possible to combine honorific and plural suffixes.

Their second function is with participial nouns, a very important category in Old Tamil syntax, as well as with the type of pronominalised nouns which are not lexicalised, but used to creatively form predicate nouns in a sort of denominative, called *kuṟippuviṉai*, "verb by intention" in the Tamil tradition. For both these formations the whole range of persons, numbers and genders is employed.

singular

1.   -ஏன்/-ஏன் *-eṉ/-ēṉ*

2.   -இ *-i*, -ஆய் *-āy*, -ஐ *-ai*, -ஒய்/-ஓய் *-oy/-ōy*

3.m.   -அன்/-ஆன் *-aṉ/-āṉ*, -ஒன்/-ஓன் *-oṉ/-ōṉ*

3.f.   -அள்/-ஆள் *-aḷ/-āḷ*, -ஒள்/-ஓள் *-oḷ/-ōḷ*

3.n.   -(அ)து *-(a)tu*

plural

1.   -அம்/-ஆம் *-am/-ām*, -எம்/-ஏம் *-em/-ēm*, -ஒம்/-ஓம் *-om/-ōm*

2.   -இர்/-ஈர் *-ir/-īr* (-ஈர்கள் *-īrkaḷ*, -மீர் *-mīr*, -மீர்கள் *-mīrkaḷ*)

3.h.   -அர்/-ஆர் *-ar/-ār*, -ஒர்/-ஓர் *-or/-ōr* (-மர் *-mar*, -மார் *-mār*)

         (pl. -கள் *-kaḷ*, -அர்கள்/-ஆர்கள் *-arkaḷ/-ārkaḷ*)[13]

3.n.   -அ/-ஐ *-a/-ai* (pl. -கள் *-kaḷ*)

irr. feminine plural: மகளிர் *makaḷir*, பெண்டிர் *peṇṭir*, "women"; irr. pl. கேளிர் *kēḷir*, "relatives"

    Note that in any ending, pronominal or verbal, the distinction between long and short எ/ஏ *e/ē*, ஒ/ஓ *o/ō* is an arbitrary one, since the length of these vowels was not marked in Tamil palm-leaf manuscript notation. Modern editors chose *ad libitum*. The existence of the dichotomy, however, is supported by the fact that we have a visible variance between அ/ஆ *a/ā* and இ/ஈ *i/ī*.

    There remains a small group of suffixes that are used for the formation of secondary verbal nouns, namely perfective and negative ones:

-அமை *-amai*   செய்தமை *cey-t*$_u$*-amai*, "the having done"

-ஆமை *-āmai*   செய்யாமை *cey-y-ā-mai*, "the not doing, not having done"

---

[13] The pl. suffix *-kaḷ* (in 2nd and 3rd person) can take a lengthened vocative form *-kāḷ*.

1.1.3 Indo-Aryan Loan Words

From the earliest attested texts onwards Tamil admitted loan words from Indo-Aryan, both Sanskrit and Prakrit. Vaidyanathan 1971 collected the ones occurring in Old Tamil (for him the *Caṅkam* corpus, the *Kīḻkkaṇakku* and the *Cilappatikāram*), but since he lists only one occurrence per word it is impossible to gain a realistic impression of frequency and distribution.   Burrow/Emeneau's *Dravidian Borrowings from Indo-Aryan* has a broader textual outlook but is a very slim volume and only scratches the surface. The first real statistics come with the glossaries to the critical editions of the *Caṅkam* corpus. It is obvious that the number of loans increases over time and virtually explodes with the bhakti works.

Rules for assimilating Sanskrit to Tamil have been laid down in the 12th-century grammar *Vīracōḻiyam*.   Many derivations are fairly transparent and regular, others are markedly less so, one of the famous examples being Skt. *asura-* > Tamil அவுணன் *avuṇaṉ*. A few remarks may suffice here.

The first obvious consequence from borrowing is a loss of information, because Tamil in writing does not distinguish between voiced and unvoiced consonants and it does not have aspirates:

k, kh, g, gh	> க் *k*	*sanga-, sangha-, śaṅkha-* > சங்கம் *caṅkam*, "union, congregration, conch"
c, ch, j, jh	> ச் *c*	*icchā-* > இச்சை *iccai*, "wish"
ṭ, ṭh, ḍ, ḍh	> ட் *ṭ*	*daṇḍa-* > தண்டு *taṇṭu*, "stick"
t, th, d, dh	> த் *t*	*dāma-, dhāman-* > தாமம் *tāmam*, "string, site"
p, ph, b, bh	> ப் *p*	*bali-* > பலி *pali*, "offering"
ś, s	> ச் *c*	*śiva-* > சிவன் *civaṉ*, "lord Śiva"

ṣ	> ட் *ṭ*	*varṣa-* > *varuṭam*, "year"
h	> க் *k*[14]	*varāha-* > வராகம் *varākam*, "hog"

Prakrit influence is betrayed by the weakening of intervocalic consonants that could be represented in Tamil: *gopāla-* > கோவல் *kōval*, "cowherd"; *bhuja-* > புயம் *puyam*, "arm"; Skt. *kṛṣṇa-* > Pkt. *kaṇha-* > கண்ணன் *kaṇṇaṉ*, "lord Kṛṣṇa".

Among the vowels, Sanskrit *e* and *o* are represented in Tamil by the long vowels ஏ *ē* and ஓ *ō*, while Skt. vocalic *ṛ* and *ṝ* are not found: *amṛta-* > அமுதம்/அமிர்தம் *amutam/amirtam*, "ambrosia"; *vṛtta-* > விருத்தம் *viruttam*, "circle".

However, Tamil has one more nasal than Sanskrit, the alveolar ன் *ṉ*, and many Sanskrit intervocalic dental nasal *n* are depicted by a Tamil alveolar: *avani-* > அவனி *avaṉi*, "earth"; *dhana-* > தனம் *taṉam*, "wealth". Occasionally a Sanskrit *r* is rendered not by Tamil ர் *r* but by ற் *ṟ*: *sthira-* > திறம் *tiṟam*, "firmness".

Since Tamil does not begin words with ர் *r* or ல் *l*, corresponding Sanskrit items are prefixed with அ- *a-*, இ- *i-* and உ- *u-*, depending on the surrounding phonemes: *rakṣasa-* > அரக்கன் *arakkaṉ*, "demon"; *rāma-* > இராமன் *irāmaṉ*, "Rāma"; *roma-* > உரோமம் *urōmam*, "hair"; *loka-* > உலகம் *ulakam*, "world"; *laṅkā-* > இலங்கை *ilaṅkai*, "Sri Lanka".

Consonant clusters are simplified along the lines already in practice in the Prakrits, the two most frequent strategies being assimilation and insertion of vowel glides, although especially in the beginning of the word consonants may simply be dropped: *kṣema-* > ஏமம் *ēmam*, "protection"; *jñāna-* > ஞானம் *ñāṉam*, "knowledge"; *cakra-* > சக்கரம் *cakkaram*, "discus"; *divya-* > திவ்வியம் *tivviyam*,

---

[14] Initial sibilant or *h-* may be lost in borrowing: *hara-* > அரன் *araṉ*, "Hara (~Śiva)".

"divine", *bhakti- >* பத்தி *patti*, "devotion"; *prabandha- >* பிரபந்தம் *pirapantam*, "composition".

A rarer choice is metathesis: *agni- >* அங்கி *aṅki*, "fire".

Many important words can have several forms: *Śrī >* திரு, சிரீ, சீ *tiru, cirī, cī*, "the goddess Śrī".

Since Tamil has a far more restricted use of genders and since the whole system of nominal inflection is much more straightforward, nominal endings are simplified:

-a and consonantal stems	*> -am/-u*, for m. eventually *-an̲:*
	அரசு/அரசன் *aracu/aracan̲*, "king"
-ā (f.)	*> -ai* n.: *senā >* சேனை *cēn̲ai*, "army"
-i (m./n./f.), *-ī*, *-in*	*> -i* (m./n./f.): *nadī >* நதி *nati*, "river"
-u (m./n./f.), *-ū*	*> -u* (n.) *madhu- >* மது *matu*, "honey"

One concomittant is the shortening of words, especially if they have many syllables: *parama- >* பரம், பரன் *param, paran̲*, "the highest, God"

Another frequent strategy besides borrowing are calques, and terminologically important words may have both: *sūtra- >* சூத்திரம் *cūttiram*, "aphorism" and நூல் *nūl*, "text" (literally both *sūtra* and *nūl* mean "thread"); *veda- >* மறை *mar̲ai* and வேதம் *vētam*, "Veda"; *karman- >* கருமம் *karumam* and வினை *vin̲ai*, "(past) deeds"; *artha- >* பொருள் *poruḷ*, "wealth - meaning".

As is to be expected, many words change meaning, thus creating "false friends" for students moving from Sanskrit to Tamil: *kavi-* "poet" > கவி *kavi* "poem", *lakṣaṇa-* "what explains" > இலக்கணம் *ilakkaṇam* "grammar" paired with *lakṣya-* "what is to be explained" > இலக்கியம் *ilakkiyam* "poetry".

Verbs are moving over rather late and are always borrowed into the 11th class of strong verbs: *vañj* > *vañci-ttal*, "to deceive"; *cint* > சிந்தித்தல் *cinti-ttal*, "to think".

1.2   Pronouns

personal pronouns

	base form	oblique
1st sg.	யான் *yāṉ*, later: நான் *nāṉ*	என் *eṉ*
2nd sg.	நீ *nī*	நின் *niṉ*, later: உன் *uṉ*
3rd sg. (m.f.n.)	தான் *tāṉ*	தன் *taṉ*
1st pl.	யாம் *yām* (exclusive), நாம் *nām* (inclusive)	எம் *em* (exclusive), நம் *nam* (inclusive)
2nd pl.	நீர் *nīr*, நீயிர் *nīyir*	நும் *num*
3rd pl. (h.+n.)	தாம் *tām*	தம் *tam*

The system of personal pronouns is simple and stable; only the first person singular base form (யான் *yāṉ*, "I") and the second person singular oblique (நின் *niṉ*, "your") are slowly taken over by நான் *nāṉ* and உன் *uṉ*, respectively, from bhakti times onwards, although for many centuries both forms are used side by side.

The third person pronoun தான்/தாம் *tāṉ/tām* functions for all genders and the plural can also be used for the honorific. It is also used as a reflexive pronoun, gradually being weakened down to the modern-day emphatic: அரசன் தான் *aracaṉ tāṉ*, "the king himself" – "the king!".

The personal pronouns, occasionally in *Kalittokai* and *Paripāṭal* but more visibly in the bhakti corpus, have a tendency to mark the genitive (எனது *eṉatu*, நினது/உனது *niṉatu/uṉatu*, etc.) and even to use a short form (என *eṉa*, நின/உன *niṉa/uṉa*, etc.) to mark a genitive with a plural object:

Tē 3.4.1.2   உன கழல் தொழுது எழுவேன்
uṉa kaḻal toḻutu eḻuvēṉ

> your(pl.) anklet worshipped rise-I
>
> "I rise in worship of your anklet[ted feet]."

demonstrative and interrogative pronouns

The demonstrative pronoun knows three degrees of deixis, close to the speaker (இ- *i-*), something like the other side of the table (உ- *u-*), and further off (அ- *a-*), of which the intermediate does not much survive *Caṅkam* times. The corresponding interrogative is எ- *e-*, in some forms ய- *y-*. These stems can simply be used in the adjectival position as proclitic vowels (அம்மரம் *a-m-maram*, "that tree"; இவ்வுலகு *i-vv-ulaku*, "this world"),[15] but there is a corresponding system of full forms:

	இ- i-	உ- u-	அ- a-	எ-/ய்- e-/y-
m.sg.	இவன் *ivaṉ*	உவன் *uvaṉ*	அவன் *avaṉ*	எவன் *evaṉ*
f.sg.	இவள் *ivaḷ*	உவள் *uvaḷ*	அவள் *avaḷ*	எவள் *evaḷ*
n.sg.	இது *itu*	உது *utu*	அது *atu*	எது *etu*,
				யாது *yātu*
				யாவது *yāvatu*,
				எவன் *evaṉ*,
				என் *eṉ*
3.h./ pl.	இவர்(கள்) *ivar(kaḷ)*	உவர் *uvar*	அவர்(கள்) *avar(kaḷ)*	யார் *yār*,
				ஆர் *ār*,
				யாவர் *yāvar*
n.pl.	இவை *ivai*	உவை *uvai*	அவை *avai*	எவை *evai*

---

[15] Note that for these forms the sandhi is special in that the glide before a vowel is always *v* and always doubled. The modern adjectival forms அந்த *anta* and இந்த *inta* are found, though rarely at first, from bhakti times onwards.

Forms in *a-* stand in if the third person pronoun needs to specify gender (அவன் *avaṉ*, "that man" or simply "he"). Only the neuters form a separate oblique stem (sg. இதன் *itaṉ*, அதன் *ataṉ*, pl. இவற்று *ivaṟṟu*, அவற்று *avaṟṟu*). In all other cases the base form is identical with the oblique. The indefinite/universal pronoun is formed by adding the enclitic coordinative *-um* to the interrogative pronoun: யாரும் *yārum*, "anybody, everybody". The same can be done with nouns: நாள் *nāḷ*, "day" > நாளும் *nāḷum* "daily". A post-position with a similar function is தொறு(ம்)/ தோறு(ம்) *toṟu(m)/tōṟu(m)*, which is to be added to nouns (நாடோறும் *nāḷ-tōṟum*, "every day"),[16] but also to verbal roots: காண்டொறும் *kāṇ-toṟum*, "whenever seeing". The short form seems to be chosen in cases where the compound yields a full metrical foot, the long form when the noun to be modified already corresponds to a *cīr*: வைகல் தோறும் *vaikal tōṟum*, "every day" (KT 298.3); தொறு *toṟu* followed by a vowel also changes to தோறு *tōṟu*.[17]

In order to emulate a Sanskrit relative construction, the அ- *a-* stem can be juxtaposed to the எ-/ய்- *e-/y-* stem (*yad – tad* ~ யாது *yātu* – அது *atu*).[18]

---

[16] Rhetorically the same effect can be achieved by repeating a noun: ஊழியூழி *ūḻi-y-ūḻi*, "aeon after aeon",

     KT 130.3f.: நாட்டின் நாட்டின் ஊரின் ஊரின் │ குடி முறை குடி முறை தேரின்
              nāṭṭiṉ nāṭṭiṉ ūriṉ ūriṉ │ kuṭi muṟai kuṭi muṟai tēriṉ
              land[in] land[in] village[in] village[in] │ hamlet order hamlet order search-if
              "If [we] search [him] in land by land, village by village, hamlet by hamlet ..."

[17] An alternative to *toṟu* with a verbal root is repeated verbal root or abstract noun plus -உழி *-uḻi*: தொடுவுழி தொடுவுழி *toṭuvuḻi toṭuvuḻi*, "whenever it touches" (KT 399.3), but also செலுழி செலுழி *celuḻi celuḻi*, "wherever she goes" (AN 49.15). Note, however, that -உழி *-uḻi* can also be used with an absolutive for a temporal clause (cf. p. 98n).

[18] An early example is found in Poy 44.1 தமர் உகந்தது எவ்வுருவம் அவ்வுருவம் தானே *tamar ukantatu e uruvam a uruvam tāṉē*, "whatever forms delights his people is just the form", i.e., the forms Viṣṇu manifests himself in.

A number of temporal, spatial and modal adverbs are connected
with the three stems (the list is not complete!):

here/there:	இவ/உவ/அவ *iva/uva/ava*
	இவண்/அவண் *ivaṇ/avaṇ*
	ஈங்கண்/ஆங்கண் *īṅkaṇ/āṅkaṇ*
	ஈண்டை/ஆண்டை *īṇṭai/āṇṭai*
here/there/where?	இங்கு/ஈங்கு/உங்கு/அங்கு/ஆங்கு/யாங்கு
and thus/how?:	*iṅku/īṅku/uṅku/aṅku/āṅku/yāṅku*
where?:	யாண்டு *yāṇṭu*
in between:	ஆயிடை *āyiṭai*
beyond:	உம்பர் *umpar*
before:	ஊங்கு *ūṅku*
like this/like that/	இங்நனம்/அங்நனம்/எங்நனம்
in which manner:	*iṅṅaṉam/aṅṅaṉam/eṅṅaṉam*,
	இங்கனம்/அங்கனம்/எங்கனம்
	iṅkaṉam/aṅkaṉam/eṅkaṉam,
what, why:	எ(ன்)னை *e(ṉ)ṉai*
how much:	எனை *eṉai*
today, that day:	இன்று/இன்றை *iṉṟu/iṉṟai*, அன்று/அன்றை
	aṉṟu/aṉṟai[19]
when?, always:	என்று *eṉṟu*, என்றும் *eṉṟum*
now:	இனி *iṉi*
even now, again:	இன்னும் *iṉṉum*

In addition to these, there are the pronominal-adjectival stems
இ(ன்)னை/அ(ன்)னை *i(ṉ)ṉai/a(ṉ)ṉai* which form a full paradigm of

---

[19] In an attributive position before a noun இன்று *iṉṟu* and அன்று *aṉṟu* have the rare
alternate (adjectival?) forms இற்றை *iṟṟai* and அற்றை *aṟṟai*: அற்றைத் திங்கள்
aṟṟait tiṅkaḷ, "that day's moon" (PN 112.1).

persons and numbers expressing that something/someone is like this
(*i-*) or like that (*a-*): கூடலனையாள் *kūṭal aṉaiyāḷ*, "she who is like
Madurai". The most frequent forms for neuter singular and neuter
plural are இற்று/அற்று *irru/arru* and இன்ன/அன்ன *inna/anna*, the
latter of which can also be used adverbially ("thus"), and அன்ன
anna is one of the more frequent particles of comparison ("like").
Moreover the அ(ன்)னை *a(n)nai* stem can merge with a perfective
verbal stem to form a *peyareccam* compound:

KT 106.6   தான் மணந்தனையம் என விடுகம் தூதே
               tāṉ maṇantaṉaiyam eṉa viṭukam tūtē
               he united-such-we say(inf.) send-we(sub.) message[e]
               "Let us send a message to say we are [still] like when
               he united with [us]."

A few more pronominal adjectives exist: பல் *pal*, "many"; சில் *cil*,
"few"; பிற *pira*, "other"; மற்று *marru*, "other"; வேறு *vēru*, "other,
different".

1.3 Adjectives

Old Tamil has a limited number of "real", simple adjectives, but a variety of techniques for marking a noun as an adjective. All of them have in common that they cannot be directly looked up in a dictionary, since they are all perceived as noun derivates (for அரு *aru*, cf. அருமை *arumai*, etc.). The simplest manner is to put another noun in attributive position directly before another noun.

The most frequent Old Tamil adjectives are:

அரு *aru*, "rare, difficult, precious"

கடு *kaṭu*, "fast, fierce, harsh"

சிறு *ciṟu*, "small, little"

இரு *iru*, "big", "dark"

பெரு *peru*, "big, great"

குறு *kuṟu*, "short"

நெடு *neṭu*, "long"

புது *putu*, "new"

பழ *paḻa*, "old"

நறு *naṟu*, "fragrant"

கரு *karu*, "black"

செம் *cem*, "red"

பசு *pacu*, "green"

வெள் *veḷ*, "white"

இள *iḷa*, "young"

முது *mutu*, "aged"

தட *taṭa*, "broad, large"

நல் *nal*, "good"

தொல் *tol*, "old"

புல் *pul*, "low, mean", "tawny"

மெல் *mel*, "soft, tender"

வல் *val*, "strong"

இன் *iṉ*, "pleasing"

ஒள் *oḷ*, "bright"

தண் *taṇ*, "cool"

திண் *tiṇ*, "firm, solid"

தூ *tū*, "pure"

தெள் *teḷ*, "clear"

நுண் *nuṇ*, "fine"

வள் *vaḷ*, "generous, liberal"

செம் *cem*, "straight"

தீம் *tīm*, "sweet"

வெம் *vem*, "hot"

பை *pai*, "fresh"

மா *mā*, "big", "dark"

வை *vai*, "sharp"

The following seven are the established techniques for adjective formation:

1	adj. with consonant stem:	நல்லா *nal-l-ā*, "good cow"
2	adj. in *-u/-a* + class nasal:	அருஞ்சுரம் *aruñ-curam*, "difficult desert"
3	verbal root as adj.:	உயர்வரை *uyar-varai*, "high mountain"

4	noun in attributive position:	குண்டுநீர் *kuṇṭu-nīr*, "deep water"
		கானமஞ்ஞை *kāṉa maññai*, "forest peacock"
5	noun + suffix -அ *-a*:	கால...குருகு *kāla...kuruku*, "legged ... heron"
6	noun + suffix -அம் *-am*[20]:	தண்ணந் துறைவன் *taṇṇam turaivaṉ*, "cool ghat-he" ("a man from the cool ghat"
		கள்ளியங் காடு *kaḷḷiyam kāṭu*, "spurge forest"
[7	modern form:	பெரிய *periya*, "big"]

A comparative is not expressed by changing the form of the adjective, but the preceeding noun takes the comparative suffix -இன் *-iṉ* plus -உம் *-um*: நிலத்தினும் பெரிதே வானினு முயர்ந்தன்று ... அன்பு, *nilattiṉum peritē, vāṉiṉum uyarntaṉru ... aṉpu*, "bigger than the earth, higher than the sky (…) is love" (KT 3.1+4). Equal degree in quality is expressed by simple -இன் *-iṉ* without -உம் *-um*: கூந்தலின் நறிய ... பூ, *kūntaliṉ nariya ... pū*, "flowers as fragrant as the tresses" (KT 2.4f.).

---

[20] In traditional grammar -அம் *-am* is taught as an increment (*cāriyai*) with tree names in particular (cf. *Tolkāppiyam Eḻuttatikāram*, 416i).

1.4 Adverbs

Old Tamil has six strategies for forming adverbs, in addition to the pronominal adverbs already discussed, and a very small number of "natural" adverbs that are without etymology or cognate forms: நனி *naṉi*, "much", தவ *tava*, "very".

1. Any adjective used in the neuter form, either singular or plural, can stand for an adverb: சிறிது *ciṟitu*, "a little" (KT 14.6), கடிய *kaṭiya*, "loudly" (KT 194.3).

The oblique form is also possible, sometimes even a double oblique: நுண்ணிதின் *nuṇṇitiṉ*, "subtly" (KT 167.6); எளிதனின் *eḷitaṉiṉ*, "easily" (NA 239.3).

2. In isolated cases we see what looks like the dative of an adjective: நற்கு *naṟku*, "well".

3. The enclitic particle -ஏ -*ē* can be added to an adjective to form the adverb: வல்லே *vallē*, "strongly".

4. The infinitive -என -*eṉa* of the quotative verb என்னுதல் *eṉṉutal*, "to speak", is not only employed in the formation of ideophones (see below), but also of adverbs: தண்ணென *taṇṇeṉa*, "coolly".

5. Infinitives can be used as adverbs. Some of them are frozen and lexicalised as such: மிக *mika*, "much". But they are also used productively: இறப்ப *iṟappa*, "exceedingly" (NA 338.4).

6. Absolutives can be used as adverbs, especially when they stand in concatenation with another absolutive: விரைஇ *viraii*, "fragrantly" (KT 62.2).

For want of a better place we may add here the small number of nouns that are used as postpositions or adverbs of position:

மேல் *mēl*, "upon"

கீழ் *kīḻ*, "beneath"

முன் *muṉ*, "before"

பின் *piṉ*, "after"

உடன் *uṭaṉ*, "along with"

உள் *uḷ*, "inside"

எதிர் *etir*, "opposite"

வெளி *veḷi*, "outside"

புறம் *puṟam*, "outside"

Note that முன் *muṉ* and பின் *piṉ* have a number of alternate forms such as: முன்னர் *muṉṉar*, பின்னர் *piṉṉar*, பின்றை *piṉṟai*, etc.

1.5 Numerals

cardinal:

	adjectival	vowel sandhi	predicative
1	ஒரு *oru*	ஓர் *ōr*	ஒன்று *oṉṟu*
2	இரு *iru*	ஈர் *īr*	இரண்டு *iraṇṭu*
3	மு *mu*	மூ *mū*	மூன்று *mūṉṟu*
4	நால் *nāl*	நாலு *nālu*	நான்கு *nāṉku*
5	ஐ *ai*	ஐம் *aim*	ஐந்து *aintu*
6	அறு *aṟu*	ஆற் *āṟ*	
7	எழு *eḻu*	ஏழ் *ēḻ*	
8	எண் *eṇ*	ஏண் *ēṇ*	எட்டு *eṭṭu*
9	ஒன்பது *oṉpatu*		
10	பது *patu/*		பத்து *pattu*
	பதின் *patiṉ*		
11	பதினொரு *patiṉoru*, etc.		
100	நூறு *nūṟu*	நூற்று *nūṟṟu*	
200	இருநூறு *irunūṟu*, etc.		
900	தொள்ளாயிரம் *toḷḷāyiram*	தொள்ளாயிரத்து *toḷḷāyirattu*	
1000	ஆயிரம் *āyiram*	ஆயிரத்து *āyirattu*	

ordinal: ஒன்றாம் *oṉṟām*, ஒன்றாவதும் *oṉṟāvatu*

When numbers are put in juxtaposition, the rule of thumb is that bigger numbers followed by smaller number have to be added, and smaller numbers followed by bigger number have to be multiplied:

Pū 41.1 எழு மூன்று முடியனைத்தும் *ēḻum mūṉṟum muṭi aṉaittum*, all the seven [plus] three heads" but Poy 35.3f. ஈரைந்து முடியான் *īr aintu muṭiyāṉ*, "he with twice five heads". Sanskrit numerals are borrowed freely from bhakti times onwards.

The numeral *oru/ōr* has a number of special usages. It may function as an indefinite article ("a"), but also as an attribute ("unique"). Moreover, from bhakti times on the sandhi form *ōr* may be used even if the following word starts with a consonant.

1.6 Ideophones

Old Tamil has a very special formation in what has recently been termed ideophones [Chevillard 2004], formerly called onomatopoeia, though only a minority among them are based on sound imitation. They consist of one or more syllables, with often, though not always unclear semantic meaning, combined with the quotative verb என்னுதல் *eṉṉutal*, "to say", in any of its forms. This means they are not only used as adverbs (abs. -என்று *-eṉru* or inf. -என *-eṉa*), although that is by far the most common usage, but also as adjectives (verbal root -என் *-eṉ* or *peyareccam* -என்ற *-eṉra*) or even as finite verbs. This flexible type of ideophone is not to be confused with poetic refrain words found in bhakti songs and often also with an onomatopoeic elements, such as தாலேலேலா *tālēlō* (Periyāḻvar fourth decade). Some ideophones also take other forms such as குக்கூ *kukkū*, denoting the call of the rooster. Also, exclamations exist, as in any language, and they might be closer to ideophones than to particles, because they usually have an emotive and onomatopoeic value. For lament, for example, there is the old அன்னோ *aṉṉō* and the bhakti-time அந்தோ *antō*.

The most common ideophones are:

அம்மென் *ammeṉ*	denoting something overfull
இம்மென் *immeṉ*	denoting a humming sound
இழுமென் *iḻumeṉ*	denoting noise or sweetness
ஒய்யென் *oyyeṉ*	expressing urgency
ஒல்லென் *olleṉ*	denoting sound
கதுமென் *katumeṉ*	denoting quickness
கம்மென் *kammeṉ*	denoting silence
கல்லென் *kalleṉ*	denoting excitement or noise

கிடிஎன் *kiṭiṉeṉ*   denoting tinkling

ஞெரேரென் *ñerēreṉ*   denoting suddeness

தண்ணென் *taṇṇeṉ*   denoting coolness

தவ்வென் *tavveṉ*   denoting heat

துட்கென் *tuṭkeṉ*   denoting alarm

துடுமென் *tuṭumeṉ*   denoting something falling into water

துண்ணென் *tuṇṇeṉ*   denoting 1. startling 2. fright
                                  3. suddenness

நள்ளென் *naḷḷeṉ*   denoting silence

புல்லென் *pulleṉ*   denoting futility/emptiness

1.7 Particles

Particles belong to the least understood elements of Old Tamil syntax, where they were one strategy, in coordination with word order, for marking sentence structures, periods, modes, moods, etc. [A detailed discussion can be found in Wilden 2006]. The system is already disintegrating in the younger parts of the *Caṅkam* corpus itself and only partly understood in the grammatical tradition (where a certain amount of confusion prevails between what is semantically empty and what is without function, both called *acai*, "expletive"). For many particles today we have no idea what their function might have been, and some of them do not have a sufficient number of occurrences to venture a sustainable hypothesis. For a few basics, see Chapters 16 and 17 under "Syntax".

Just for illustrating the numbers, what follows is an (incomplete) list of particles from the *Caṅkam* and bhakti corpus; many of them may also combine into particle clusters such as கொல்லோ *kollō:*

அம்ம *amma*	lament; invitation of attention
அரோா *arō*	?
ஆ *ā*	interrogative (late)
ஆர் *ār*	?
ஆல் *āl*	assertive
இகா *ikā*	?
ஏ *ē*	sentence-final; focalising; interrogative (late)
ஓ *ō*	interrogative
கொல் *kol*	interrogative
கொன் *koṉ*	?
தில்ல *tilla*	wish
தெய்ய *teyya*	admonition

மற்று *marru*	adversative; ?
மன் *maṉ*	assertive
மன்ற *maṉṟa*	assertive
மாது *mātu*	?
மாதோ *mātō*	rhetorical question
மாள *māḷa*	?
யாழ *yāḻa*	?

Noun Phrases

2. Nominal Sentences and Pronominalised Nouns

Nominal sentences are very common in Old Tamil. The regular word order is: **S O P**. In addition there are complicated focalisation (emphasis) patterns that are marked by particles. There is no copula, but occasionally emphasis can be expressed with a verb of existence:

NA 400.6 எவன் பிழைப் புண்டோ   *evaṉ piḻaipp_u uṇṭō*

          what mistake it-is[ŏ]   "What mistake is there?"

KT 207.1 செலவரி தாகும்   *celav_u arit_u ākum*

          going difficult-it become-it. "Going WILL be difficult."

    The simplest form of a nominal sentence is an unmarked juxta-position of noun to noun:

KT 35.5 வாடையும் பிரிந்திசினோர்க் கழலே

        vāṭaiyum pirinticiṉōrkk_u aḻalē

        north-wind[um] separated-they(dat.) fire[ē]

        "Even the north wind [is] fire to those who are separated."

    [Here the particle *-ē* is not a means of focalisation, but just the sentence ending particle of the classical Āciriyam metre.]

Pēy 53.4 வேங்கடமே யாம்விரும்பும் வெற்பு

        vēṅkaṭamē yām virumpum veṟpu

        Vēṅkaṭam[ē] we desiring- mountain

        "The mountain we desire is Vēṅkaṭam."

    Here the sentence structure is the same, but the particle *-ē* is used to mark a focalisation, namely the anteposition of the predicate noun.

    The second possibilty is a minimal mark on a noun with a pronominalised noun employed either as an adjectival predicate noun or as a denominative.

KT 18.5   உயிர்தவச் சிறிது காமமோ பெரிதே

            uyir tavac ciṟitu, kāmamō peritē

            life very small-it, desire[ŏ] big-it[ē]

            "Life is very small, desire, ah, it is big."

NA 101.5f.   துறைநணி யிருந்த பாக்கமு முறைநனி | யினிதுமன்

            *tuṟai naṇi irunta pākkamum **uṟai naṉi** | **iṉitu**maṉ*

            ghat nearness been- village[um] staying much | pleasant-it[maṉ]

            "Staying in the village, too, that was near the ghat, was
              very pleasant indeed."

KT 12.4   கவலைத் தென்ப வவர்சென்ற வாறே

            kavalaitt[u] eṉpa avar ceṉṟa āṟē

            crossroad-it they-say he(h.)- gone- way[ē]

            "It has a crossroad, they say, the way he has gone."

[The following two examples elucidate the option of choosing between a verbal sentence and one with a pronominalised noun:

KT 325.4	யாண்டுளன் கொல்லோ	where he-is[kollō]
	yāṇṭ[u] uḷaṉ kollō	"Where is he?"
KT 379.1	இன்றியாண் டையனோ தோழி	today where-he[ŏ] friend
	iṉṟu yāṇṭaiyaṉō tōḻi	"Today, where is he, friend?"]

The feature here called pronominalised noun is one of the most intriguing aspects of the early language. They constitute half of the explanation as to why in Tamil the border line between noun and verb is far weaker than, say, in an Indo-European language. In their productive form, which may be called, with the traditional term *kuṟippuviṉaimuṟṟu*, or, in English, denominative, they come close to being verbs, while on the other side of the border the distinction between a participal noun and a finite verb is often morphologically unmarked and many strategies for cross-over exist.

The formation of pronominalised nouns of the type that can be lexicalised (already mentioned in the Introduction) is simple and has been well-described in Lehmann 2004. To a noun or adjective, in base or oblique form, a pronominal suffix is added:

N/adj.(-obl.)-pron.suff.

noun	நாடு *nāṭu* "land"	செல்வம் *celvam* "wealth"	அறம் *aṟam* "duty"	வண்ணம் *vaṇṇam* "colour"	நெஞ்சம் *neñcam* "heart"
stem	நாடன் *nāṭaṉ* "man from a land"	செல்வர் *celvar* "wealthy people"	அறவன் *aṟavaṉ* "dutiful man"	வண்ணன் *vaṇṇaṉ* "man with a colour"	
oblique stem	நாட்டன் *nāṭṭaṉ*				நெஞ்சத்தன் *neñcattaṉ* நெஞ்சத்தான் *neñcattāṉ* "man with a heart"
oblique suffix	[நாட்டினன் *nāṭṭiṉaṉ*]			முகம் mukam "face"	முகத்தினள் *mukattiṉaḷ* "woman with a face"

Normally, the pronominal endings with the vowel ஒ/ஓ *o/ō* are reserved for participial nouns. There are, however, cross-overs, some even lexicalised. The vowel is changed from long *ā* to long *ō* regularly for metrical-euphonic reasons at the poems end (காதலர் *kātalar* – காதலோரே *kātalōrē*).

The productivity of pronominalised nouns is highest in the early corpus and diminishes gradually until only frozen forms remain. The following tables record a few of the more productive words in their attestations in *Kuṟuntokai*, *Naṟṟiṇai* and *Akanāṉūṟu*.

	noun	adjective
	அன்பு *aṉpu*, "love"	இளம் *iḷa(m)*, "young"
2.sg.	அன்பினை *aṉpiṉai*	
3.m.	அன்பினன் *aṉpiṉaṉ*	இளையோன் *iḷaiyōṉ*
f.sg.		இளையோள் *iḷaiyōḷ*
3.h.	அன்பினர் *aṉpiṉar*	இளையர் *iḷaiyar*, இளையோர் *iḷaiyōr*,
		இளையவர் *iḷaiyavar* (full pronoun)
n.pl.	அன்பின *aṉpiṉa*	

The defective verb stem உடை *uṭai*, "possess", whether it be verbal or nominal, is attested for the full paradigm:

உடையேன் *uṭaiyēṉ*	1.sg.
உடையை *uṭaiyai*	2.sg., உடையோய் *uṭaiyōy*
உடையள் *uṭaiyaḷ*	f.sg.
உடையன் *uṭaiyaṉ*	m.sg.
உடைத்து *uṭaittu*, உடையது *uṭaiyatu*	n.sg.
உடையம் *uṭaiyam*	1.pl.
உடையீர் *uṭaiyīr*	2.pl.
உடையர் *uṭaiyar*	3.h., உடையோர் *uṭaiyōr*
உடைய *uṭaiya*	n.pl.

The following types of relation are well-attested:

possessive, alienable	செல்வன் *celvan*	"he who is prosperous"
possessive, inalienable	முடியினள் *muṭiyinaḷ*	"she who has a hair knot"
locative	நாடன் *nāṭan*	"he who is from a country"
objective	அளியள் *aḷiyaḷ*	"she who is to be pitied"
subjective	அறவர் *aṟavar*	"they who adhere to duty"
attributive	பெரியர் *periyar*	"they who are big"
	முன்னர் *munnar*	"they who are before"

Note that for a feminine formation the special feminine suffix -இ *-i* is an alternative to the pronominal ending -அள்/-ஆள் *-aḷ/-āḷ*: தோளி *tōḷ-i* "she who has a shoulder" (post-*Caṅkam*).

3. Attribution

Attribution is a poetic phenomenon that gains supreme syntactical importance in a language that is dependent on word order and that does not originally have relative pronouns. First, we shall focus here on the simple type containing nominal forms (noun, pronominalised noun, participial noun, pronoun, adjective, adverb), but no nonfinite verbal forms. The word order **S O P** is observed here as well, and the point to be taken in is that **attribution is always left-branching**, unless *etukai* (the rhyme pattern; see Chapter 20 under "Veṇpā") distorts the order of words.

Attribution may be minimally marked with an oblique:

KT 24.1   கருங்காற் வேம்பி னொாண்பூ யாணர்

karum kāl vēmpiṉ oḷ pū yāṇar

black leg Neem-tree[in] bright flower freshness

"the freshness of the bright flower of the black-trunked Neem tree"

Attribution may be marked with an adjective suffix:

KT 16.5 அங்காற் கள்ளியங் காடு   *am kāl kaḷḷiyam kāṭu*

pretty leg Kaḷḷi[am] forest   "a pretty-trunked spurge forest"

Attribution may be marked with a possessive *-uṭai* or *-keḻu* + a pronominalised noun:

KT 56.3   வளையுடைக் கையள்   *vaḷai-y-uṭaik kaiyaḷ*

bangle possess- hand-she "she with hands that possess bangles"

Attribution can remain completely unmarked, with the consequence that relations may be ambiguous:

KT 286.4 பேரமர் மழைக்கண் கொடிச்சி

pēr_u amar maḻai kaṇ koṭicci

> big beauty rain eye creeper-she
>
> "creeper girl with big beautiful rain eyes"
>
> "big, beautiful rain-eyed creeper girl"
>
> "creeper girl with eyes [that are like] a big beautiful rain"

Relations may be bracketed and asymmetrical:

KT 15.4f. ஆய்கழல் சேயிலை வெண்வேல் விடலை

> *āy kaḻal | cē ilai veḷ vēl viṭalai*
>
> select- anklet | red leaf white spear warrior
>
> "warrior with choice anklets [and] a red-tipped white spear"

Relations may be bracketed and symmetrical:

KT 101.4f. பூப்போ லுண்கண் பொன்போன் மேனி

> மாண்வரி யல்குற் குறுமகள்
>
> *pū pōl uṇ kaṇ poṉ pōl mēṉi*
>
> *māṉ vari alkul kuṟu makaḷ*
>
> flower similar kohl eye gold similar body
>
> fame line hip short woman
>
> "small woman with flower-like kohl eyes,
>
> a gold-like body [and] hips of glorious outline"

A minimal string is achieved by adding the verbal root to the above-mentioned elements, another peculiarity of Early Old Tamil especially:

KT 2.1   கொங்குதேர் வாழ்க்கை யஞ்சிறைத் தும்பி

> *koṅku tēr vāḻkkai am ciṟai tumpi*
>
> pollen search- livelihood pretty wing bee
>
> "pretty-winged bee whose livelihood is searching for pollen"

A further typical element is the use of comparisons:

KT 23.2f.   மனவுகோப் பன்ன நன்னெடுங் கூந்த | லகவன் மகளே

  maṉavu kōpp$_u$ aṉṉa nal neṭum kūntal | akaval makaḷē

  chank-bead string like good long tresses | Akaval woman$^{\bar{e}}$

  "sooth-saying woman with good long tresses [white] like
    chank beads!"

Adverbs may also be integrated:

KT 37.1   நசைபெரி துடையர்   *nacai perit$_u$ uṭaiyar*
    longing big-it(adv.)   "He greatly possesses
    possess-he(h.)   longing."

Adverbial phrase of place may be head nouns:

KT 138.2f.   எம்மி லயல தேழி லும்பர் | ... நொச்சி

  em il ayalat$_u$ ēḻil umpar | … nocci

  our- house neighbourhood-it Ēḻil(-hill) beyond | ...
  Nocci-tree

  "the Nocci tree ...

  beyond the Ēḻil hill that is near our house"

4. String Attribution

The phenomenon called string attribution is basically an extension of the attribution already seen, but additionally includes nonfinite verbal forms, beginning with the verbal root, but also both types of *peyareccam*, the verbal noun, the absolutive and the infinitive. In other words, what distinguishes string attribution from subordinate clauses in the Indo-European sense is the fact that syntactically it always ends with a head noun on the right side. Very frequent extensions are subject appositions and comparisons or similes. This form of subordination extends over anything from one line up to thirty or even more – some of the long songs in the *Pattuppāṭṭu* consist of a single sentence.

Absolutive + imperfective *peyareccam* + verbal root:

KT 88.2f. சிறுகட் பெருங்களிறு வயப்புலி **தாக்கித்**

தொன்முரண் **சோருந் துன்ன**ருஞ் சாரல்

*ciṟu kaṇ perum kaḷiṟu vayam puli **tākki***

*tol muraṇ **cōrum** tuṉṉᵤ arum cāral*

little eye big elephant-bull strength tiger attacked

old antagony diminishing- approach- difficult slope

"the slope difficult to approach, where the old antagony diminishes after the small-eyed big elephant bull attacked the strong tiger"

Comparison + infinitive + perfective *peyareccam*:

KT 35.2-5 சினைபசும் பாம்பின் சூன்முதிர்ப் **பன்ன**

கனைத்த கரும்பின் கூம்புபொதி **யவிழ**

நுண்ணுறை யழிதுளி **தலைஇய**

தண்வரல் வாடை

*ciṉai pacum pāmpiṉ cūl mutirppᵤ **aṉṉa***

*kaṉaitta karumpiṉ kūmpu poti **aviḻa***

*nuṇ uṟai aḻi tuḷi **talaiiya***

taṇ varal vāṭai

twig green snake[in] egg ripeness like

ripened- sugar-cane[in] close- bud open(inf.)

fine drip- perish- drop offered-

cool coming north wind

"the coolly coming north wind

that offered finely dripping dispersing drops

so that the closed buds on the ripened sugar cane open,

like the ripe state of the eggs of the twig-green snake"

Causal absolutive + abs. + abs. + imperfective *peyareccam*:

KT 69.1-5 கருங்கட் டாக்கலை பெரும்பிறி **துற்றெனக்**

கைம்மை யுய்யாக் காமர் மந்தி

கல்லா வன்பறழ் கிளைமுதற் **சேர்த்தி**

யோங்குவரை யடுக்கத்துப் **பாய்ந்துயிர் செகுக்குஞ்**

சார நாட

*karum kaṇ tā kalai perum piṟit_u **uṟṟeṉa***

kaimmai uyyā kāmar manti

*kallā val paṟaḻ kiḷai-mutal **cērtti***

*ōṅku varai aṭukkattu **pāynt_u** uyir **cekukkum***

cāral nāṭa

black eye rushing male-monkey big other-it had-because

widowhood escape-not desirable female-monkey

learn-not strong young-one horde(loc.) united

high mountain mountain-side- sprung life destroying-

slope land-he(voc.)

"o man from a land of slopes,

where the desirable she-monkey that did not escape
widowhood,

because the black-eyed rushing male monkey had
experienced the great other,

joined [her] untaught young one to the horde

[and] destroyed [her] life by jumping from the side of the
high mountain"

Causal absolute + absolute + infinitive + comparison +
imperfective *peyareccam*:

KT 139.1-5

மனையுறை கோழிக் குறுங்காற் பேடை

வேலி வெருகின மாலை **யுற்றெனப்**

புகுமிட னறியாது **தொகுபுடன் குழீஇய**

பைதற் பிள்ளைக் கிளை**பயிர்ந் தாஅங்**

கின்னா **திசைக்கு** மம்பல்

maṉai uṟai kōḻi kuṟum kāl pēṭai

*vēli veruk_u iṉam mālai **uṟṟeṉa***

*pukum iṭaṉ aṟiyātu **tokup_u uṭaṉ kuḻīiya***

*paital piḷḷai kiḷai **payirntāaṅku***

*iṉṉāt_u **icaikkum** ampal*

house remain- fowl short leg she-bird

hedge wild-cat group evening had-because

entering- place know-not gathered together crowd(inf.)

trouble child relations called-like

unpleasant-it sounding- rumour

"rumours that sound unpleasant

as if the short-legged hen of the fowl living near the house

were calling [her] flock of suffering chicks,

assembled, crowding together not knowing a place to enter,

because in the evening a group of wild cats turned up at the hedge"

Subject apposition:

KT 285.1-3

வைகல் வைகல் வைகவும் **வாரா**

ரெல்லா வெல்லை யெல்லையுந் **தோன்றார்**

யாண்டுளர் கொல்லோ தோழி

*vaikal vaikal vaikavum **vārār***

*ellā ellai ellaiyum **tōṉṟār***

yāṇṭ$_u$ uḷar-kollō tōḻi

day day being-kept(inf.)[um] come-not-he(h.)

all daylight edge[um] appear-not-he(h.)

where he-is(h.)[kollō] friend

"He who did not come [back], since he is kept day by day,

and who did not appear on all the borders of daylight

(~evenings)

where is he, friend?"

Comparison:

KT 160.1-5   நெருப்பி னன்ன செந்தலை யன்றி

லிறவி னன்ன கொடுவாய்ப் பெடையொடு

தடவி னோங்குசினைக் கட்சியிற் பிரிந்தோர்

கையற நரலு நள்ளென் யாமத்து

neruppiṉ aṉṉa cem talai aṉṟil

iṟaviṉ aṉṉa koṭu vāy peṭaiyoṭu

taṭaviṉ ōṅku ciṉai kaṭciyiṉ pirintōr

kai aṟa naralum naḷḷeṉ yāmattu
fire[in] like red head Aṉṟil(-bird)
shrimp[in] like curved mouth female-bird-with
tree[in] high twig nest[in] separated-they(h.)
action end(inf.) calling- deep(id.)- midnight-
"deep midnight,
when the Aṉṟil bird with a head red like fire
in the nest on a high branch of the tree, calls
for [its] female with a beak curved like a shrimp
so that action ends in those separated"

NA 190.5-7 வண்டுமூசு நெய்த நெல்லிடை மலரு
மரியலங் கழனி யார்க்காட் டன்ன
காமர் பணைத்தோள்

vaṇṭu mūcu neytal nel iṭai malarum
ariyalam kaḻaṉi ārkkāṭṭ[u] aṉṉa
kāmar paṇai tōḷ
bee swarm- blue-water-lily paddy middle blossoming-
nectar[am] field Ārkkāṭu(p.n. of a town)- like
desirable bamboo shoulder
"[she with] desirable bamboo shoulders
who is like [the town] Ārkkāṭu with nectary fields
where bee-swarmed water-lilies bloom amidst the
paddy"

As a conclusion, here is a simile typical of *Caṅkam* literature, one
that has earned the poet his name Cempulappeyaṉīrār:

KT 40.4f. செம்புலப் பெயனீர் போல
வன்புடை நெஞ்சந் தாங்கலந் தனவே

cem pulam peyal nīr pōla

aṉp$_u$ uṭai neñcam tām kalantaṉavē.

 red soil raining water be-similar

love possess- heart self(pl.) they-mingled(n.pl.)$^{\bar{e}}$

"Like red soil [and] pouring water

[our] loving hearts themselves have mingled."

5. Denominative (*kuṟippuviṉaimuṟṟu*)

Pronominalised nouns are not only used as a means of enlarging the lexicon, but they can also be employed in the function of predicate nouns – *kuṟippu-viṉai-muṟṟu*, "a finite verb by intention". In this capacity they are very frequent in Early Old Tamil, but the numbers are decreasing towards the end of the millennium. Spontaneous literary forms are found as well as established patterns with many occurrences.

KT 7.1f. வில்லோன் காலன கழலே தொடியோண்

மெல்லடி மேலவுஞ் சிலம்பே

villōṉ kālaṉa kaḻalē toṭiyōḷ

mel aṭi mēlavum cilampē

bow-he leg-they(n.pl.) anklet[e]. armlet-she

tender foot above-they(n.pl.)[um] tinkling-anklet[e].

"Anklets [are on] the feet of him with the bow, and anklets

[are] on the tender feet of her with bracelets."

If lexicalised items are employed in the function of predicate nouns, they may optionally be endowed with a special mark, any slight alteration of their usual form; one of the poetic designations of the poetic hero in the Marutam tract is ஊரன் *ūraṉ*, literally "the man from the village", and as such entered into the Tamil Lexicon. In KT 97.3 the female speaker wants to make a different sort of point, by stating that the man is currently staying in his village with his own people, i.e., ஊரான் *ūr-āṉ*:

KT 97.3   துறைவன் நம்மூ ரானே   ghat-he their- village-he[e]

tuṟaivaṉ tam ūrāṉē   "The man from the ghat is
                                in their village."

KT 242.1-4   கானங் கோழிக் கவர்குரற் சேவ

லொண்பொறி யெருந்தின் றண்சித ருறைப்பப்

புதனீர் வாரும் பூநாறு புறவின்

சீறூ ரோளே மடந்தை

kāṉam kōḻi kavar kural cēval

oḷ poṟi eruntiṉ taṇ citar uṟaippa

putal nīr vārum pū nāṟu puṟaviṉ

cīṟ$_u$ ūrōḷē maṭantai

forest fowl seize- voice rooster

bright spot neck[in] cool drop drip(inf.)

shrub water overflowing- flower smell- woodland[in]

little village-she[e] girl

"[My] girl is in a little village

in the flower-scented woodlands, where shrubs over-
                                                    flow with water

so that cool drops drip on the bright-spotted neck

of the rooster of the forest fowl with a seizing voice."

NA 59.6-8   வன்புலங் காட்டுநாட் டதுவே யன்புகலந்து

நம்வயின் புரிந்த கொள்கையொடு நெஞ்சத்

துள்ளின ளுறைவோ ளூரே

val pulam kāṭṭu nāṭṭatuvē aṉpu kalantu

namvayiṉ purinta koḷkaiyoṭu neñcatt$_u$

uḷḷiṉaḷ uṟaivōḷ ūrē

hard field wilderness- land-it[e] love mingled

us(loc.) desired- principle-with heart-

remembered-she remain-she village[e]

"It is in the wild lands of hard soil,

> the village of her who stayed [back] remembering me,
>
> [her] heart, mingled with love, with the [sole]
>
> observance of desiring us."

These forms are by no means restricted to the third person, but they occur throughout the paradigm:

KT 51.3f.   சேர்ப்பனை │ யானுங் காதலேன்

cērppaṉai │ *yāṉum kātalēṉ*

coast-he(acc.) │ I[um] love-I

"I too, I love the man from the coast."

Indeed some noun stems form virtually full paradigms (and have in consequence also been analysed as defective verbs by some scholars); the table for உடை *uṭai* has already been shown on p. 61:

KT 206.5   குறுக லோம்புமி னறிவுடை யீரே

kuṟukal ōmpumiṉ aṟiv$_u$ *uṭaiyīrē*

nearing beware(ipt.) knowledge possess-you(pl.)[ē]

"Beware of coming near, you who possess knowledge."

NA 183.6-8   வயின்றோ

ரின்னா தலைக்கு மூதையோ டோரு

நும்மில் புலம்பின் மாலையு முடைத்தே

                          vayiṉ-tōr$_u$

iṉṉā talaikkum ūtaiyōṭ$_u$ *ōrum*

num il pulampiṉ mālaiyum uṭaittē

                          side-ever

pleasant-not whipping- cold-wind-with listening-(?)

your(pl.)- house loneliness[iṉ] evening[um] possess-it[ē]

"Does your house possess evenings of loneliness too,

when you listen to the unpleasantly whipping cold
wind?"

Another candidate for an almost complete paradigm is அளி *aḷi*,
"pity" or "love", intriguing for the formulaic systems it is part of and
to be treated under formulae in Chapter 19:

KT 30.6   தமியேன் மன்ற அளியேன் யானே

tamiyēṉ-maṉṟa aḷiyēṉ yāṉē

alone-I^manra pity-I I^ē

"Alone indeed, pitiable am I."

KT 212.4f.   அளிதோ தானே காமம்

விளிவது மன்ற நோகோ யானே

aḷitō tāṉē kāmam

viḷivatu-maṉṟa nōkō yāṉē

pity/love-it^ō self^ē desire

perish-it^manra I-ache^ō I^ē

"Pitiable it is, desire.

It will perish for sure. Ah, I ache."

[An outstanding case is NA 355.10 with the imperative அளிமதி
aḷimati, "have pity!", that semantically does not relate to the existing
verbal root அளி *aḷi*, "to care", but to the well-established
denominative, that is, a noun plus an imperative suffix.]

VERBS

The Old Tamil verbal system was clearly based on a dual distinction that is better described as aspectual than as temporal; the basic dichotomy is imperfective – perfective/inchoative [see the discussion for modern Tamil in Deigner 1998]. Since other modes besides the indicative are at best in rudimentary existence, what is hypothetical or irreal has to be expressed along with any type of past, present and future with these two groups of forms. This is one of the reasons why particles were important, although they were later increasingly replaced by adverbs. The two most frequent functions of the perfective aspect are the past tense and what would be called, in Vedic Sanskrit, an aorist: அணிந்தாள் *aṇintāḷ*, "she was adorned" or "she has put on her ornaments". The imperfective covers present and future. The present *tense* infiltrates from the bhakti period onwards but takes a long time to become firmly established. Even as late as the 12th(?) century conservative texts like, for example, the *Kallāṭam* make do without it. The present tense very likely developed out of an early auxiliary construction consisting of a verbal root in combination with the verb கில்-தல் *kil-tal*, "to be able to": யாரோ பிரிகிற்பவரே *yārō pirikiṟpavarē*, "who are those that will be able to separate?" (KT 22.2), with a regular imperfective of a 10th-class verb. In the early Vaiṣṇava *Antāti*-s, then, we find that type of form along with a formation like அறிகின்றேன் *aṟikiṉṟēṉ* (Pēy 87.1), which at first sight looks like a corresponding perfective, "I was able to know", but which in context might well already be understood as "I know".

Tamil has a simple verbal system that can be represented in twelve classes plus a thirteenth for a moderate number of irregulars.[21] They

---

[21] There are two commonly used systems of counting the verb classes, the one of the Tamil Lexicon with twelve classes in Arabic numbers, as well as one in seven classes (+ sub-classes) with Roman numbers going back to Graul 1855. This book follows the division of the Tamil Lexicon as the most important work of reference.

are counted as weak, intermediate and strong, depending on the suffixes they take for forming the perfective and the imperfective aspect. In fact the twelfth class is a mixed class in that it has a "weak" perfective, but a "strong" imperfective. The present tense is almost identical for all of them, with one minor deviation in the last two classes. Note that it took some time before the modern period the present suffix -கின்ற்- *-kinr-* was weakened into -கிற்- *-kir-*. For an overview of the principal forms see the two folding tables (one for the twelve classes and one for the irregulars) at the back of this book, adapted into English from the immensely useful tables found in Beythan 1943.

One further peculiarity of the Tamil verbal system is that it has positive and negative forms for almost all finite forms (indicative, imperative, optative) as well as for some of the nonfinite forms (absolutive and *peyareccam*). The latter will be treated along with their positives. For the phenomenon of main verb negation, see Chapter 14.

The suffixes for the twelve verb classes:

root		Perfective	imperfective	(present)
weak				
1.	செய் *cey*	*cey-t$_u$*	*cey-v-*	(*cey-kinr-*)
2.	ஆள், ஆளு *āḷ(u)*	*aṇ-t$_u$*	*āḷu-v-*	(*āḷu-kinr-*)
3.	கொல்(லு) *kol(lu)*	*kon̠-r̠$_u$*	*kollu-v-*	(*kollu-kinr-*)
4.	அறி *ar̠i*	*ar̠i-nt$_u$*	*ar̠i-v-*	(*ar̠i-kinr-*)
5.	தூங்கு *tūṅku*	*tūṅk$_u$-in̠-*	*tūṅku-v-*	(*tūṅku-kinr-*)
6.	விடு *viṭu*	*viṭ-ṭ$_u$*	*viṭu-v-*	(*viṭu-kinr-*)
intermediate				
7.	உண் *uṇ*	*uṇ-t$_u$*	*uṇ-p-*	(*uṇ-kinr-*)
8.	தின் *tin̠*	*tin̠-r̠$_u$*	*tin̠-p-*	(*tin̠-kinr-*)
9.	கேள் *kēḷ*	*kēṭ-ṭ$_u$*	*kēṭ-p-*	(*kēṭ-kinr-*)
10.	கல் *kal*	*kar̠-r̠$_u$*	*kar̠-p-*	(*kar̠-kinr-*)
strong				
11.	தீர் *tīr*	*tīr-tt$_u$*	*tīr-pp-* (*tīr-kk-*)	(*tīr-**k**-kin̠r-*)
12.	நட *naṭa*	*naṭa-nt$_u$*	*naṭa-pp-* *naṭa-kk-*	(*naṭa-**k**-kin̠r-*)

In some classes there is a complementary relation (**intransitive – transitive** 4th to 11th class: புணர்தல் *puṇartal*, "to unite" – புணர்த்தல் *puṇarttal*, "to bring together"; **transitive – causative** 6th to 11th class: விடுதல் *viṭutal*, "to let go"; விடுத்தல் *viṭuttal*, "to cause to let go") but with the early *Kīḻkkaṇakku* and bhakti corpus also a **causative formation** in analogy to an 11th class verb, develops: imperfective/ perfective செய்விக்கு-/செய்வித்து- *ceyvikku-/ceyvittu-*, "to cause to do".

There is in general a very great fluidity of category between finite and nonfinite forms. In the simple regular formation (type 1 below) the distinction between a participial noun and a finite verb is not marked, although a number of strategies have been developed to disambiguate.

formation of participial nouns:

imperfective

1	root-*v/p/pp*-pron. suff.	செய்வர் *cey-v-ar*, "they who do" [or "they do", finite form]
2	root-*p/pp*-pronoun	அணிபவர் *aṇi-p-avar*, "they who adorn"[22]
3	root-(*u*)*n*-pron. suff.	சொல்லுநர் *col-l-un-ar*, "they who speak"
4	root-*um*-pron.suff./pron. (late)	அறியுமோன் *aṟi-y-um-ōṉ*, "he who knows"

perfective

1	root-*nt/t/iy/(iṉ)/tt*-pron. suff.	அறிந்தம் *aṟintam*, "we who knew"
2	root-*nt/t/iy/(iṉ)/tt*-pronoun (late)	அகன்றவர் *akaṉ-ṟ-avar*, "they who departed"
3	root-*nt/ṉṟ-iciṉ*-pron. suff. (except for the 5th class)	அறிந்திசினோர் *aṟi-nt-iciṉ-ōr*, "they who knew"

Note that for type 3 after -இ *-i* and -ஐ *-ai* palatalisation is possible: அறிஞர் *aṟiñar*. Note further that, just like the pronominalised nouns, participial nouns, especially of the type 3 imperfective, are frequently lexicalised: செருநர் *cerunar*, "enemies",

---

[22] The particularity of this type appears to be that the weak stem in *-v-* is not used; all classes employ *-p-* while the 11th and 12th double into *-pp-*.

பொருநன் *porunaṉ*, "warrior/dancer". This formation even spills over to noun stems: வினைஞர் *viṉaiñar*, "workers".

The most frequent basic forms are the first in each aspect, and they are ambiguous forms: வருவன் *varuvaṉ*, "he who comes" or "he comes". If a poet wants to mark the participial noun, he may either use forms of the types 2 and 3, or he chooses the pronominal ending that employs ஒ/ஓ *o/ō* as a vowel (possible in 2nd and 3rd person animate singular as well as in 1st and honorific plural; see below). Like so many rules for Old Tamil this is a rule of thumb, but it holds good surprisingly frequently.

If, on the contrary, the poet wants to mark a form as a finite verb form, he may choose a suffix *-ku-* for the imperfective (வருகுவள் *varukuvaḷ*, "she comes") or the suffix *-aṉ-* for the perfective (செய்தனன் *cey-t$_u$-aṉ-aṉ*, "he did"). Frequently of course the finite verb is also marked by the use of particles or simply by position.

[Note that *-aṉ-* rarely also occurs as a suffix with the imperfective, with unclear rhetorical impact: விரைவனள் *viraivaṉaḷ*, "she is in a hurry" (AN 16.14).]

Additional confusion is brought about by an extraordinary finite form, traditionally called a *muṟṟeccam* ("what has a finite verb for its complement"), that occurs within a sentence and which a commentator usually will gloss as an absolutive, to be treated in more detail in Chapter 15a.

The verbal suffixes are almost identical to the pronominal suffixes:

sg.

1st	-என்/-ஏன், -அன் -*eṉ*/-*ēṉ*,-*aṉ*	
2nd	-இ -*i*, -ஆய் -*āy*, -ஐ -*ai*	┤-ஒய்/-ஓய் -*oy*/-*ōy*
3rd m.	-அன்/-ஆன் -*aṉ*/-*āṉ*,	┤-ஒன்/-ஓன் -*oṉ*/-*ōṉ*
3rd f.	-அள்/-ஆள் -*aḷ*/-*āḷ*	┤-ஒள்/-ஓள் -*oḷ*/-*ōḷ*
3rd n.	-(அ)து -*(a)tu*	

pl.

1st	-அம்/-ஆம் -*am*/-*ām*, -எம்/-ஏம் -*em*/-*ēm*	┤-ஒம்/-ஓம் -*om*/-*ōm*
2nd	-இர்/-ஈர் -*ir*/-*īr*, (-மிர் -*mīr*)	
3rd h.	-அர்/-ஆர் -*ar*/-*ār*	┤-ஒர்/-ஓர் -*or*/-*ōr*
3rd pl.	-கள் -*kaḷ*, (-மார் -*mār*)	
3rd n.	-அ/-ஐ -*a*/-*ai*, -அவை -*avai*	

Note here in particular the potential ambiguity arising from the use of -அன் -*aṉ* for both the first person singular and the third person singular masculine.[23]

Additional forms exist which might be explained as fossils from regional variations or verbal systems that did not make it into the classical literary idiom that was more or less codified by the second half of the first millennium (perhaps when the textual tradition changed from oral to written).

---

[23] Note further that both neuter singular and neuter plural occasionally have short forms, homophonous to the absolutive in the singular, homophonous to a perfective *peyareccam* in the plural (NA 220.9cf. குறுமகட் ⎸ கயலோ ராக**லென் றெம்**மொடு படலே *kuṟu makaṭku ⎸ ayalōr ākal* **eṉṟu** *emmoṭu paṭalē*, "what happens to us means that he will become the neighbour of the little woman"; NA 5.9 மயங்கிதழ் மழைக்கண் **பயந்த** தூதே *mayaṅku itaḻ maḻai kaṇ* **payanta** *tūtē*, "rain eyes with dishevelled lashes have brought forth a message").

1.sg. i.a.	v.r.-asp. suff.-*al*	போல்வல் *pōl-v-al*, "I resemble" (KT 103.6)
		செறிப்பல் *ceṟi-p-pal*, "I tighten" (NA 206.9)
[1.pl. p.a.	v.r.-asp. inf.-*ikum*	கண்டிகும் *kaṇ-ṭ-ikum*, "we saw" (NA 20.1)]
3.pl. i.a.	v.r.-*pa*	என்ப *eṉ-pa*, "they say"[24]
3.pl. i.a.	v.r.-*mār*	நோன்மார் *nōṉ-mār*, "they suffer" (NA 208.6)
3.sg. (m.f.n.)	v.r.-*um*	மல்கும் *malk$_u$-um* "it increases"

The latter form is the famous habitual future that is formally identical with the imperfective *peyareccam*. The first rule of thumb for distinguishing them is that the *peyareccam* never comes with a particle. Note that the form does not only cover the third person singular in all the three genders, but also at times the neuter plural (examples are discussed at the end of Chapter 6 on the *peyareccam*).

Most grammars of Tamil would include here also the forms in -கு, -கம், -கும், -தும், -தி, -திர் *-ku, -kam, -kum, -tum, -ti, -tir*. In this grammar these forms are understood as another, complementary paradigm and tentatively termed "subjunctive", discussed in Chapter 10 under "Moods".

---

[24] This frequent form for the high-class plural is also used occasionally as an honorific: காணா கழிப *kāṇā kaḻipa* "he (the lover) passes by without seeing [me]" (KT 231.4).

6. *Viṉaiyeccam*

(Also known as: Absolutive/Co(n)verb/Verbal Participle/Gerund)

The Old Tamil system of nonfinite verbal forms is complex and it serves to express the main forms of subordination. The basic functions and clauses have been described in Zvelebil 1967, the only major contribution to Tamil syntax, but his description was more oriented by the perspective of later pre-modern formal Tamil in that many peculiarities of the older language are not noticed.

Among the forms called *viṉaiyeccam* ("that which needs a verb as a complement") in the grammatical tradition the most frequent and syntactically important form is what has since been variously termed verbal participle, coverb, converb or absolutive. This book follows the latter designation, simply for the obvious similarity this form has with what Sanskrit scholars nowadays refer to as an absolutive.

The basic official rule, in Tamil as in Sanskrit, is that there should be subject identity between the absolutive and the main verb in a sentence. In fact, statistically about 30% of early Tamil absolutives *change* the subject. This fact is silently acknowledged by the commentarial convention of glossing a subject-changing absolutive by an infinitive (செய்து *ceytu* by செய்ய *ceyya*). The rule of thumb accordingly is: first, try to understand the construction as using the same subject; second, if that does not work, accept a change of subject.

Note also that in narrative poetry the absolutive is used, rather than a finite verb, to advance the action when the subject remains identical.

forms of the absolutive:

positive

1. perfective stem	செய்து *ceytu*, **"having done"**[25]
	புணர்த்து *puṇarttu*, **"having united"**
5th class	அஞ்சி *añci*, **"having feared"**
	[special, metrically lengthened form for 5th class in *-uvu:* தழுவு *taḻuvu:* தழீஇ *taḻīi*, "having embraced"]
2. verbal root + *(p)pu*	செய்பு *ceypu*, "having done"
	உணர்ப்பு *uṇarppu*, "having perceived"
5th class	அஞ்சுபு *añcupu*, "having feared"
3. verbal root + *-ā*	செய்யா *ceyyā*, "having done" (homophonous with the neg. abs.!)
4. verbal root + *-ū(u)*	தேடூஉ *tēṭūu*, "having sought" (rare)

negative

5. verbal root + *-ā*	செய்யா *ceyyā* (homophonous with the positive absolutive!)
6. verbal root + -ātu	**செய்யாது *ceyyātu***
7. verbal root + *-āmal*	செய்யாமல் (later: from *Kalittokai* on)
[8. verbal root + *-āmai*	செய்யாமை *ceyyāmai* (homophonous to negative verbal noun; transitional form)]

---

[25] Note that கொள்-தல் *koḷ-tal*, "to take", abs. கொண்டு *koṇṭu*, has, from bhakti times onwards, கொடு *koṭu* as an alternate form of the absolutive (PeTM 187.2: கஞ்சனைக் கால்கொடு பாய்ந்தாய் *kañcaṉaik kāl koṭu pāyntāy*, "taking Kañcaṉ by the leg you lept").

Note that from bhakti times onwards there is a small number of absolutives that may serve as postpositions:

நின்று *niṉṟu*	"from"[26]
கொண்டு/கொடு *koṇṭu/koṭu*	"with"
நோக்கி *nōkki*	"thanks to, in consideration of"
பற்றி *paṟṟi*	"on the basis of, with respect to"

The classical absolutive clause with subject identity looks like this:

KT 69.2-4   மந்தி │ கல்லா வன்பறழ் கிளைமுதற் சேர்த்தி

யோங்குவரை யடுக்கத்துப் பாய்ந்துயிர் செகுக்கும்

manti │ kallā val paṟaḻ kiḷai-mutal cērtti

*ōṅku varai aṭukkattu pāynt*ᵤ *uyir cekukkum*

female-monkey │ learn-not strong young-one
horde(loc.) united

high mountain mountain-side- sprung life destroying-

"the female monkey joins [her] untaught young one to the horde,

jumps from the side of the high mountain [and thus] destroys [her] life."

The subject can be left open, a possibility exploited by poets:

KT 4.2,4	... கண்ணீர் தாங்கி	... *kaṇṇīr tāṅki*
	... நோமென் னெஞ்சே	... *nōm eṉ neñcē*
	... eye-water endured	"enduring tears
	... aches my- heartᵉ̄	my heart aches."

---

[26] Even later comes -இலிருந்து *-iliruntu*, "from", the modern postposition of the ablative.

The relations can be ambiguous, again possibly deliberately:

KT 21.1-4 வண்டுபடத் ததைந்த கொடியிண ரிடையிடுபு

பொன்செய் புனையிழை கட்டிய மகளிர்

கதுப்பின் றோன்றும் புதுப்பூங் கொன்றை │ கானம் ...

vaṇṭu paṭa tatainta koṭi iṇar iṭaiyiṭupu

poṉ cey puṉai iḻai kaṭṭiya makaḷir

katuppiṉ tōṉṟum putu pūm koṉṟai │ kāṉam ...

bee happen(inf.) been-full- creeper cluster between placed

gold make- adorn- ornament tied- women

hair[in] appearing- new flower Laburnum(-tree) │ forest

"forest of laburnum with new flowers that appear like the hair of women who have tied in decorative ornaments made of gold,

inserting clusters full of creepers full so that bees visit [them]"

Debatable and sanctioned by the gramatical tradition are cases where the subject of the absolutive can be understood as a part or possession of the main verb subject:

NA 369.1   சுடர்சினந் தணிந்து குன்றஞ் சேர

cuṭar ciṉam taṇintu kuṉṟam cēra

sun anger decreased hill join(inf.)

"when the sun joins the hill, [its] anger decreasing"

There are many obvious cases of change of subject like the following:

KT 88.2f.   சிறுகட் பெருங்களிறு வயப்புலி தாக்கித்

தொன்முரண் சோருந் துன்னருஞ் சாரல்

ciṟu kaṇ perum kaḷiṟu vayam puli tākki

tol muraṇ cōrum tuṉṉ_u arum cāral

little eye big elephant-bull strength tiger attacked

old antagony diminishing- approach- difficult slope

"slope difficult to approach where the old antagony diminishes

after the small-eyed big elephant bull attacked the strong tiger"

The following is an example of poetic multiple subject change:

NA 328.1-3   கிழங்கு கீழ்வீழ்ந்து தேன்மே றூங்கிச்

சில்சில வித்திப் பல்பல விளைந்து

தினைகிளி கதியும் பெருங்க னாடன்

kiḻaṅku kīḻ vīḻntu tēṉ mēl tūṅki

cil cila vitti pal pala viḷaintu

tiṉai kiḷi katiyum perum kal nāṭaṉ

bulbous-root below descended honey above hung

few few(n.pl.) sown many many(n.pl.) ripened

millet parrot chasing-away- big stone land-he

"man from a land of big stones, where

bulbous roots descend beneath, honey hangs above,

they sow but a few [and] many many ripen,

they chase the parakeets from the millet"

The following quotation contains, along with a rare example of the absolutive in -ஊ(உ) *-ū(u)*, also both the செய்யா *ceyyā* and செய்யாது *ceyyātu* types for the negative absolutive:

AN 113.9f.   நல்காது துறந்த காதல ரென்றுங்

கால்பொரூஉ மெலியாப் பாடின்

nalkātu tuṟanta kātalar eṉṟum

kāl porūu meliyā pāṭiṉ

grant-not abandoned lover(h.) always

time beaten become-soft-not sing-if

"if [we] sing without softening, [and] always beating the time,

the lover who has abandoned us without granting [his presence]"

செய்யா *ceyyā* type for the positive absolutive:

KT 341.1-3   பல்வீ பட்ட பசுநனை குரவம்

பொரிப்பூம் புன்கொடு பொழிலணிக் கொளாஅச்

சினையினி தாகிய காலையும்

pal vī paṭṭa pacu naṉai kuravam

pori pūm puṉkoṭu poḻil aṇi koḷāa

*ciṉai iṉit*ᵤ *ākiya kālaiyum*

many blossom happened- green bud bottle-flower-tree

be-parched- flower Puṉku-tree-with grove adornment take

twig pleasant-it become(p.)- time^{um}

"Even at a time when the twigs have become pleasing,

after the grove has taken for decoration the bottle-flower tree

with green buds that fall as many blossoms, along with

the Puṉku tree with flowers [looking like] parched rice"

செய்யாமல் *ceyyāmal* type for the negative absolutive (late):

Kali 1.3   கூறாமற் குறித்ததன்மேற் செல்லுங் கடுங்கூளி

kūṟāmal kuṟittataṉ mēl cellum kaṭum kūḷi

tell-not intended-it- upon going- fierce demon

> "the fierce demons who go according to what is
> intended [by you] without [your] telling"

Occasionally the negative verbal noun in -ஆமை *-āmai* can stand in for a negative absolute:

Kali 2.16ff. கல்லிறந்து செயல்சூழ்ந்த பொருள்பொரு ளாகுமோ

தொல்லியல் வழாஅமைத் துணையெனப் புணர்ந்தவள்

புல்லாகம் பிரியாமை பொருளாயி னல்லதை

kal iṟantu ceyal cūḻnta poruḷ poruḷ ākumō

tol iyal vaḻāamai tuṇai eṉa puṇarntavaḷ

pul ākam piriyāmai poruḷ āyiṉ allatai

stone traversed going considered- wealth wealth it-is[ō]

old conduct deviate-not companion say(inf.) united-she

empty chest not-separating wealth if except

"will the wealth that considers going, traversing rocks, be wealth

unless it is the wealth of not separating from the empty breast

of her who is united [with you] as a consort without deviating from ancient conduct?"

One more special function is fullfilled by the absolutive in comparative clauses (probably to be analysed as a compound form), where it allows, beyond a simple comparison from noun to noun, a comparison of processes. Two subtypes of this are found, namely absolutive plus ஆங்கு *āṅku* and absolutive plus அன்ன *aṉṉa*.

The ஆங்கு *āṅku* type demands an absolutive connection and quite naturally implies a change of subject:

KT 18.4f.   சிறுகோட்டுப் பெரும்பழந் தூங்கியாங்கிவ

ஞயிர்தவச் சிறிது காமமோ பெரிதே.

ciṟu kōṭṭu perum paḻam tūṅkiyāṅk$_u$ ivaḷ

uyir tava ciṟitu kāmamō peritē.

small twig big fruit hung-like she-

life very small-it desire[o] big-it[e]

"Like a big fruit hanging on a small twig,

her life is very small, [her] desire, ah, it is big."

The அன்ன *anna* type generally, though not always, corresponds to a *peyareccam* connection, as such justifiying the question whether the analysis as absolutive plus அன்ன *anna* actually is correct, or whether it does not rather fall under the type of *peyareccam* form with irregular sandhi that is mentioned above on p. 46:

KT 386.5   நிலம்பரந் தன்ன புன்கணொடு

            nilam parantanna puṉkaṇoṭu

            ground spread-like sorrow

            "sorrow that is as if spread on the ground"

A special type of absolutive forms a causal clause formed by adding the quotative என *eṉa*:

KT 42.2f.   கருவி மாமழை வீழ்ந்தென வருவி

            விடரகத் தியம்பும்

            karuvi mā maḻai vīḻnteṉa aruvi

            viṭar akatt$_u$ iyampum

            amount big rain fallen-because waterfall

            cave inside- sounding-

            "the waterfall resounds inside the cave

            because rain large in amount has fallen."

Another less frequent combination is a temporal clause of absolutive plus -உடன் -*uṭaṉ* in the sense of "as soon as":

NA 63.3f.   புன்னை

           விழவுநாறும் விளங்கிணர் விரிந்துடன் கமழும்

                        puṉṉai

           viḻavu nāṟum viḷaṅkₐ iṇar virintuṭaṉ kamaḻum

                        mast-wood

           festival smelling- shine- cluster expanded-together being-fragrant-

           "where shining clusters of mast-wood, smelling of festival, are fragrant as soon as they expand"

7. Infinitive (Different Types = Modalities)

There are a number of forms that mostly go by the designation of "infinitive". Here the rule of thumb is the opposite to that for the absolutive: expect a *change* of subject,[27] although very occasionally the same subject can be found. The obvious exception is an auxiliary construction based on infinitive plus auxiliary (such as the passive with படுதல் *paṭutal*). The most frequent type and the only one to survive up to modern Tamil is the infinitive in -அ *-a*. Its primary functions are subordinate clauses that are resultative ("so that") or simultaneous ("when, while"), but occasionally causal ("as, since") or final ("in order to"), rarely conditional ("if"). In narrative poetry this form is used, rather than a finite verb, to advance the action when the subject changes.

<div align="center">forms of the infinitive</div>

1. -அ *-a*	**added to the root in classes 1-8, to the imperfective stem classes 9-12:**
	செய்ய *ceyya*, "to do"
	நிற்ப *niṟpa*, "to stand" (later நிற்க *niṟka*)
	தீர்ப்ப *tīrppa*, "to end" (later தீர்க்க *tīrkka*)
2. -மார் *-mār*	தருமார் *tarumār*, "in order to give" (less frequent)
3. -இய *-iya*	காணிய *kāṇiya*, "in order to see"
	(often with *aḷapeṭai*[28]) உணீஇய *uṇīiya*, "in order to eat"
4. -இயர் *-iyar*	கடியர் *kaṭiyar*, "in order to chase"
	(often with *aḷapeṭai*) கொடீஇயர் *koṭīiyar*, "in order to give"

---

[27] For this reason Jean-Luc Chevillard for one (for personal communication) insists on calling the *ceyya* type infinitive an absolutive.
[28] I.e., the metrically lengthened form explained in Chapter 20.

5. -வான் -*vāṉ*,   அளப்பான் *aḷappāṉ*, "in order to measure"
 -(ப்)பான் *-(p)pāṉ*   (less frequent; rarely found in the old texts)

Type 2 seems to cover more or less the same function as type 1, but is much less common, while the types 3-5 seem predominantly to appear in final function ("in order to"). Final infinitives need not involve a change of subject. Note that type 3 (-இய *-iya*) and type 4 (-இயர் *-iyar*) are homophonous with the optative, type 3 as well as to the perfective *peyareccam* of the 5th class. Type 5 (-வான்/ -(ப்)பான் *-vāṉ/-(p)pāṉ*) is homophomous with the imperfective masculine singular.

A number of verbs take an infinitive:

KT 114.3   செலவியங் கொண்மோ

                cela viyam koṇmō

                go(inf.) order take(ipt.)

                "take the order to go!"

 -அ -*a*

The normal resultative function is "so that"

KT 65.1-3 வன்பரற் றெள்ளறல் பருகிய விரலைதன்

                னின்புறு துணையொடு மறுவந் துகளத்

                தான்வந் தன்றே தளிதரு தண்கார்

                val paral teḷ aṟal parukiya iralai taṉ

                iṉpᵤ uṟu tuṇaiyoṭu maṟuvantᵤ ukaḷa

                tāṉ vantaṉṟē taḷi taru taṇ kār

                hard pebble become-clear- water drunk- Iralai[-deer] own-

                joy have- companion-with mixed-up jump(inf.)

                self it-cameᵉ drip- give- cool rainy-season

"It has come, the dripping cool rainy season,

so that the Iralai deer that drank clear water between

hard pebbles leaps in union with its joyful mate."

The normal temporal function: "while/as"

KT 195.1-3   சுடர்சினந் தணிந்து குன்றஞ் சேரப்

படர்சுமந் தெழுதரு பையுண் மாலை

யாண்டுளர் கொல்லோ

cuṭar ciṉam taṇintu kuṉṟam cēra

paṭar cumant$_u$ eḻutaru paiyuḷ mālai

yāṇṭ$_u$ uḷar-kollō

sun anger decreased hill join(inf.)

affliction laden rise- give- sorrow evening

where he-is(h.)^{kollō}

"Where is he,

in sorrowful evening that rises laden with affliction,

while the sun joins the hills, [its] anger decreasing?"

One special function is indirect speech: "that"

KT 24.5f.   ...   கொடியோர் நாவே

காதல ரகலக் கல்லென் றவ்வே

...   *koṭiyōr nāvē*

kātalar akala kalleṉṟavē

...   cruel-they tongue^{ē}

lover(h.) depart(inf.) 'kal'-they-said(n.pl.)^{ē}

"The tongues of cruel people

foretold that [my] lover would depart."

One rarer function is temporal bordering on conditional "when/if". Note that Old Tamil does not have a clear-cut distinction between temporal and conditional; even actual conditional forms may express simultaneity.

KT 127.4f. ஒருநின் பாணன் பொய்ய னாக

வுள்ள பாண ரெல்லாம்

oru niṉ pāṇaṉ poyyaṉ āka

uḷḷa pāṇar ellām

one your- bard liar become(inf.)

be(pey.) bard(h.) all

"If your one bard is a liar,

all bards that exist [are]."

Also causal function is attested: "since"

KT 212.1-3 கொண்க னூர்ந்த கொடுஞ்சி நெடுந்தேர்

தெண்கட லடைகரைத் தெளிமணி யொலிப்பக்

காண வந்து

koṇkaṉ ūrnta koṭuñci neṭum tēr

teḷ kaṭal aṭai karai teḷi maṇi olippa

kāṇa vantu

man-from-the-sea(?) mounted- handle long chariot

clear sea settle- shore clear bell sound(inf.)

see(inf.) come

"since clear bells are sounding on the set shore of the clear sea, come to see the chariot long with a pole(?) mounted by the man from the sea"

-மார் -*mār:*

KT 155.5f.   மாலை நனிவிருந் தயர்மார்

தேர்வரும்

mālai na<u>n</u>i virunt_u ayarmār

tēr varum

evening abundant feast be-engaged-in(inf.)

chariot coming-

"the chariot is coming

so that [she] will be preparing an ample feast for the evening"

The following three are examples of infinitive 3-5 in final function: "in order to"

-இய -*iya:*

KT 269.4-6   யாயு

முப்பை மாறி வெண்ணெற் றீஇய

வுப்புவிளை கழனிச் சென்றனள்

                              yāyum

uppai mā<u>r</u>i ve<u>l</u> nel tarīiya

uppu vi<u>l</u>ai ka<u>l</u>a<u>n</u>i ce<u>n</u>r<u>a</u><u>n</u>al

                              mother^{um}

salt(acc.) exchanged white paddy give(inf.)

salt ripen- field she-went

                              "Mother

has gone to the field where salt ripens

in order to bring white paddy in exchange for salt."

-இயர் -*iyar:*

KT 141.1f. வளைவாய்ச் சிறுகிளி விளைதினைக் கடீஇயர் │ செல்க

vaḷai vāy ciṟu kiḷi viḷai tiṉai kaṭīiyar | celka

curve- mouth little parakeet ripen- millet chase(inf.)
may-go(opt.)

"You may go in order to chase away parakeets with
curved beaks from the ripening millet."

-வான் *-vāṉ/-*(ப்)பான் *-(p)pāṉ:*

Pari 7.57   அவளைக் கைப்பிணை நீக்குவான் பாய்வாள்

avaḷai kai piṇai nīkkuvāṉ pāyvāḷ

she(acc.) hand tie remove(inf.) she-jumps

"she jumps in order to remove the tie of [his] hand on her"

Finally here comes one of the rarer examples for the temporal
infinitive not changing the subject:

KT 285.1-3   வைகல் வைகல் வைகவும் வாரா

ரெல்லா வெல்லை யெல்லையுந் தோன்றார்

யாண்டுளர் கொல்லோ தோழி

vaikal vaikal vaikavum vārār

ellā ellai ellaiyum tōṉṟār

yāṇṭu uḷar-kollō tōḻi

day day being-kept(inf.)[um] come-not-he(h.)

all daylight edge[um] appear-not-he(h.)

where he-is(h.)[kollō] friend

"He who does not come as he is kept back day after day,

he who does not appear at all the borders of daylight

(~evenings),

where is he, friend?"

8. *Peyareccam* – Habitual Future/Temporal Clauses

What is called *peyareccam* ("that which needs a noun as a complement") in the Tamil grammatical tradition is sometimes referred to as an adjectival participle, relative participle (etc.), but since it is another indeclinable with no counterpart in any Indo-European tradition it is best to stick to the Tamil word. It is the feature developed in Tamil to deal with relative construction. It establishes a connection between the verbal action and the head noun, and this relation may be any type of subject, object or modal relation. Peculiar in Early Old Tamil is the possible range of its influence. It frequently is merely attributive or governs one further noun besides its head noun, but it may also govern clauses, sometimes of considerable length. It appears that the distribution of "power", so to speak, is uneaven. While the perfective *peyareccam* is merely attributive or governs short clauses, the imperfective *peyareccam* may in addition govern long clauses. In early Akam poetry that capacity is linked to the poetic feature of the *uḷḷurai*, "inset", a coded message hidden in such a clause of landscape description (cf. Wilden 2006: 293-307). As a later development, the present tense *peyareccam* does not differ from the other two and has a restricted scope just as the perfective one.

There are a number of formalised *peyareccam* + noun formations with the purpose of forming temporal and modal clauses:

temporal -ஞான்று *-ñāṉṟu*, -கால் *-kāl*, "time"; -இடை *-iṭai*, "between"; -இடத்து *-iṭattu*, obl. of இடம் *iṭam*, "place"; -முன் *-muṉ*, "before"; -பின் *-piṉ*, "after"[29]

modal -ஆறு *-āṟu*, "way"; -படி *-paṭi*, -வகை *-vakai*, -வண்ணம் *-vaṇṇam*, "manner"

---

[29] The only postposition that forms a temporal clause with an absolutive, not with a *peyareccam*, is -உழி *-uḻi*, a construction not yet found in the *Caṅkam* corpus: Cilap 11.14 இளமரக் கானத் திருக்கை புக்குழி *iḷa marak kāṉattᵤ irukkai pukkᵤ-uḻi*, "when they entered the seat in the forest with young trees".

The formation of the *peyareccam*:

perfective *pey.* 5th class	past stem + *a*	செய்த *cey-t-a,* "that did"
		அஞ்சிய *añc-i-y-a,* (அஞ்சின *añc-i-ṉ-a*) "that feared"
		உணர்த்த *uṇar-tt-a,* "that informed"
imperfective *pey.*	imperf. stem + *-um*	செய்யும் *cey-y-um,* "that does/will do"
		அஞ்சும் *añc_u-um,* "that fears/will fear"
		உணர்க்கும் *uṇar-kk-um,* "that informs, will inform"
[present *pey.*	root + *-kiṉṟa*	செய்கின்ற *cey-kiṉṟa,* "that does"]
negative *pey.*	root + *-ā*	செய்யா *ceyyā,* "that does not"
negative *pey.*	root + *-āta*	செய்யாத *ceyyāta,* "that does not"

p.a. attributive:

KT 77.3	உழந்த வம்பலர்	*uḻanta vampalar*
	died- traveller(h.)	"dead travellers"
KT 35.3	கனைத்த கரும்பின்	*kaṉaitta karumpiṉ*
	ripened- sugar-caneⁱⁿ	"ripe sugar cane"

p.a. in minor clauses:

KT 86.1   சிறைபனி யுடைந்த சேவரி மழைக்கண்
          ciṟai paṉi uṭainta cē ari maḻai kaṇ
          check- dew broken- red streak rain eye

"red-streaked rain eyes from which the checked tears
broke forth"

KT 79.1f. கான யானை தோனயந் துண்ட

பொரிதா ளோமை வளிபொரு நெடுஞ்சினை

kāṉam yāṉai tōl nayant_u uṇṭa

pori tāḷ ōmai vaḷi poru neṭum ciṉai

forest elephant skin longed- eaten-

be-parched- foot toothbrush-tree wind beat- long branch

"wind-beaten long branch of the toothbrush tree with a
parched trunk

from which the forest elephant had eaten, desiring the
bark"

KT 348.2f. புலந்தேர் யானைக் கோட்டிடை யொழிந்த

சிறுவீ முல்லைக் கொம்பின்

pulam tēr yāṉai kōṭṭ_u iṭai oḻinta

ciṟu vī mullai kompiṉ

field search- elephant horn(obl.) middle stayed-behind-

little blossom jasmine twig[in]

"like a jasmine twig with little blossoms

that had stayed behind between the tusks of an elephant
searching the field"

adverbial clauses of time with *pey*. p.a. (i.a. also possible):

KT 25.5 குருகு முண்டுதான் மணந்த ஞான்றே

kurukum uṇṭu tāṉ maṇanta ñāṉṟē

heron[um] it-is he united-time[ē]

"the heron was there at the time he united [with me]."

adverbial clauses for anterior time ("before") with **negative** *peyareccam:*

KT 352.5f. சிறுபுன் மாலை யுண்மை

யறிவேன் றோழியவர்க் காணா வூங்கே

ciṟu pul mālai uṇmai

aṟivēṉ tōḻi avar kāṇā-v-ūṅkē

little empty evening existence

know-I friend he(h.) see-not-before[ē]

"Before I see him I shall know, friend,

of the existence of small empty evenings."

adverbial clauses of manner with *pey.* p.a. (i.a. also possible; late):

AiAi 26.1+4   பெருநகை யாகின்றே ... இடருற்ற வாறு

peru nakai ākiṉṟē ... iṭar uṟṟavāṟu

big laughter it-became[ē] ... affliction experienced-way

"It became big laughter, ... the way [he] experienced affliction."

i.a. attributive:

KT 58.1   இடிக்குங் கேளிர்   *iṭikkum kēḷir*

admonishing- friends   "admonishing friends"

i.a. minor clause:

KT 143.2   பழியு மஞ்சும் பயமலை நாடன்

paḻiyum añcum payam malai nāṭaṉ

blame[um] fearing- yield mountain land-he

"the man from the land of fertile mountains who also fears blame"

i.a. relative clause:

KT 25.3-5   தினைத்தா ளன்ன சிறுபசுங் கால

              வொழுகுநீ ராரல் பார்க்குங் │ குருகு

              tiṉai tāḷ aṉṉa ciṟu pacum kāla

              oḻuku nīr āral pārkkum │ kuruku

              millet foot like small green legged

              flow- water Āral(-fish) looking-out- │ heron

              "heron, with legs a little green like millet stalks,

              who looks out for Āral fish in the flowing water"

i.a. adverbial clause of place:

KT 38.1-3   கான மஞ்ஞை யறையீன் முட்டை

              வெயிலாடு முசுவின் குருளை யுருட்டுங்

              குன்ற நாடன்

              kāṉam maññai aṟai īṉ muṭṭai

              veyil āṭu mucuviṉ kuruḷai uruṭṭum

              kuṉṟam nāṭaṉ

              forest peacock rock bring-forth egg

              sunlight play- langur[in] young-one rolling- hill land-he

              "man from a land of hills,

              where the young one of the langur playing in the
              sunlight

              rolls the egg laid on the rock by a forest peacock"

i.a. ambiguous relations:

KT 8.1f. கழனி மாத்து விளைந்துகு தீம்பழம்

          பழன வாளை கதூஉ மூரன்

          kaḻaṉi māttu viḷaint_u uku tīm paḻam

paḻaṉam vāḷai katūum ūraṉ

paddy-field mango-tree(obl.) ripened shed- sweet fruit

pond Vāḷai(-fish) seizing- village-he

"man from a village where the Vāḷai fish in the pond seizes

the sweet fruit dropped ripe from the mango tree by the

paddy field"

i.a. adverbial clause of time:

KT 141.3-7 கொல்லை

நெடுங்கை வன்மான் கடும்பகை யுழந்த

குறுங்கை யிரும்புலிக் கோள்வ லேற்றை

பைங்கண் செந்நாய் படுபதம் பார்க்கு

மாரிரு ணடுநாள் வருதி

kollai

neṭum kai val māṉ kaṭum pakai uḻanta

kuṟum kai irum puli kōḷ val ēṟṟai

paim kaṇ cem-nāy paṭu patam pārkkum

ār_u iruḷ naṭu-nāḷ varuti

clearing

long hand strong stag fierce enmity borne-

short hand dark tiger taking strong male

green eye red dog happen- carcas looking-

difficult darkness middle-day you-come(sub.)

"You would come at midnight in difficult darkness,

when the green-eyed red dog looks out for the fallen carcas

of the male, strong in taking, of the short-handed dark tiger

that had borne the fierce enmity of the long-handed strong

male (~ elephant)"

tōnṟum comparison clause:

KT 47.1f.   கருங்கால் வேங்கை வீயுகு துறுக

              லிரும்புலிக் குருளையின் றோன்றுங் காட்டிடை

              karum kāl vēṅkai vī uku tuṟu kal

              irum puli kuruḷaiyin tōnṟum kāṭṭu iṭai

              black leg Vēṅkai blossom shed- thick stone

              dark/big tiger young[in] appearing- wilderness middle

              "in the middle of the wilderness,

               where the thick stone on which the blossom of the

              black-trunked kino tree had fallen,

              appears like the cub of the big tiger"

Since the habitual future in -*um* and the imperfective *peyareccam* in -*um* are homophonous and thus only distinguishable by syntax, the following examples are added to illustrate the practical problem. Possible indications that allow to distinguish one from the other would be found in the wider contexts of the source poems. In poetry at times, to be sure, both are possible. Again, note that the habitual future covers all 3rd persons singular (m./f./n.) as well as the neuter plural.

m.sg.

KT 8.2+6   ஊரன் ... │ மேவன செய்யுந்தன் புதல்வன் றாய்க்கே

              ūran ... │ *mēvana ceyyum tan putalvan tāykkē*

              village-he ... │ wish-they(n.pl.) he-does self- son
              mother(dat.)[ē]

              "The man from the village does what is wished for by
              the mother of his son."

f.sg.

KT 45.4   மறுவருஞ் சிறுவன் றாயே

maṟuvarum ciṟuvaṉ tāyē

is-upset little-he mother^ē

"The mother of the little one is upset."

n.pl.

KT 193.6   இன்று முல்லை முகைநா றும்மே

iṉṟu mullai mukai nāṟumē

today jasmine bud they-are-fragrant^ē

"Today the jasmine buds are fragrant."

n.sg. (or pey.)

KT 4.1   நோமென் னெஞ்சே நோமென் னெஞ்சே

nōm eṉ neñcē nōm eṉ neñcē

it-aches my heart^ē it-aches my heart^ē

"Ah, my heart aches, my heart aches."

KT 6.3f.   நனந்தலை யுலகமுந் துஞ்சு

            மோர்யான் மன்ற துஞ்சா தேனே

naṉam talai ulakamum tuñcum

ōr yāṉ-maṉṟa tuñcātēṉē

wide place world^{um} sleeping-

one I^{maṉṟa} sleep-not-I^ē

"The whole world of vast area is sleeping.

I alone am the one who does not sleep."

or "When the whole world of vast area is sleeping,

I alone am the one who does not sleep."

9a. Verbal Root for *Peyareccam* (Absolutive, Infinitive, Verbal Noun)

The ubiquitous and extremely variable use of the verbal root is one of the most intriguing features of Early Old Tamil. Employed in attribution, compounds and auxiliaries, the verbal root can moreover stand in for any nonfinite verbal form in any type of subordination. The simplest most common usage is attributive, that is, a verbal root stands in for an adjective. This is called *viṉaittokai*, "verbal compound" in the grammatical tradition. According to Tamil grammarians, the most frequent function of a verbal root is that of a *peyareccam*, often with a discernible temporal/aspectual impact. As such it can also be clause-governing, but mostly not over more than three elements (N^1-v.r.-N^2). In an important article Chevillard puts forth the thesis of complementarity between marked and unmarked syntax, venturing to say that the scope of the verbal root does not exceed a single line of verse [Chevillard 2007a]. More intriguing is the fact that it may also correspond to the other nonfinite forms, namely absolutive, infinitive and verbal noun [Wilden 2016]. Moreover it is used with some auxiliaries such as *taru-tal* or *kil-tal* (வரை இழதரும் அருவி *varai iḻi-tarum aruvi*, "a waterfall that tumbles from the mountain"), and finally also with the indefinite தொறும் *toṟum*: ஓதல் மல்குதொறும் *ōtal malku-toṟum*, "whenever the flood increases" (KT 9.5).

attributive without aspectual impact:	ஓங்குமலை *ōṅku malai*, "high mountain"
attributive for *pey*. p.a.: AN 1.4	அறுகோடு *aṟu kōṭu*, "broken tusk"
attributive for *pey*. i.a.: KT 299.4	புணர்குறி *puṇar kuṟi*, "sign for uniting"

minimal clause for *pey.* p.a.:

KT 79.2	வளிபொரு நெடுஞ்சினை	*vaḷi poru neṭum ciṉai*
	wind beat- long branch	"long branch beaten by the wind"
KT 118.3	பலர்புகு வாயில்	*palar puku vāyil*
	many(h.) enter- door	"a door entered by many"

minimal clause for pey. i.a.:

KT 7.6	வேய்பயி லழுவம்	*vēy payil aḻuvam*
	bamboo rustle- thicket	"thicket rustling with bamboo"
KT 150.3	சாந்துபுல ரகலம்	*cāntu pular akalam*
	sandal dry- chest	"chest on which sandal dries"

Less common is the verbal root in clause-governing function, but still some examples can be found:

KT 53.3   வேலன் புனைந்த வெறியயர் களந்தொறும்

vēlaṉ puṉainta veṟi ayar kaḷam-toṟum

spear-he practised- Veṟi-dance immerse- floor-ever

"on every dance floor where they are immersed in the Veṟi dance practiced by the spear-bearing [priest]"

KT 163.1-5   பூழியர்

சிறுதலை வெள்ளைத் தோடுபரந் தன்ன

மீனார் குருகின் கானலம் பெருந்துறை

வெள்வீத் தாழைத் திரையலை

நள்ளென் கங்குலும்

                                pūḻiyar

ciṟu talai veḷḷai tōṭu parantaṉṉa

mīṉ ār kurukiṉ kāṉalam perum tuṟai
veḷ vī tāḻai tirai alai
naḷḷeṉ kaṅkulum

                                    Pūḻiyar(h.)

little head goat multitude spread-like
fish become-full- egret[in] seashore-grove- big ghat
white blossom screwpine wave slap-
deep(id.)- night[um]
"at deep night,
when the waves slap against the white-blossomed
screwpine tree
at the big ghat with a seashore grove with fish-eating
egrets
spread like a multitude of small-headed white goats
of the Pūḻiyar."

verbal root for infinitive:

KT 70.5	அணை மெல்லியள்	*aṇai melliyaḷ*
	touch- soft-she	"she is soft to touch"

NA 108.2c-3   கடும்கண் யானை
                அணையக் கண்ட வங்குடிக் குறவர்
                kaṭum kaṇ yāṉai
                aṇaiya kaṇṭa am kuṭi kuṟavar
                fierce eye elephant
                approach(inf.) seen pretty hamlet hill-people(h.)
                "the hill people with [their] pretty hamlets,
                who have seen a fierce-eyed elephant approach"

| KT 398.8 | கண்கலி ழுகுபனி | *kaṇ kaliḻ uku paṉi* |
| | eye weep- shed- dew | "dew shed while the eyes weep" |

verbal root for verbal noun:

KT 132.5	தாய்காண் விருப்பின்	*tāy kāṇ viruppiṉ*
	mother see yearning[in]	"with yearning to see the mother"
AN 66.11ab	காண்டல் விருப்பொடு	*kāṇṭal viruppoṭu*
	seeing desire-with	"with the desire to see"
KT 88.3	துன்னரஞ் சாரல்	*tuṉṉ*[u] *arum cāral*
	approach- difficult slope	"a slope difficult to approach"
KT 344.7	பெறலரும் பொருள்	*peṟal arum poruḷ*
	obtaining difficult wealth	"wealth difficult to obtain"

But see also:

Tē 1.73.9.1	அந்தமாதி யயனு மாலு மார்க்கு மறிவரியான்
	antam āti ayaṉum mālum ārkkum aṟiv[u] *ariyāṉ*
	end beginning Ayaṉ[um] Māl[um] who(dat.)[um] knowledge difficult-he
	"As for beginning [and] end, he is difficult to know for Brahmā, Māl and everybody."

verbal root for absolutive:

KT 134.5	கதழ்வீ ழருவி	*kataḻ vīḻ aruvi*
	haste- descend- waterfall	"a hastily descending waterfall"
AN 19.13cd	கதழ்ந்துவி ழவிரறல்	*kataḻntu viḻ avir aṟal*
	hastened descend- shine- water	"hastily descending shining water"

KT 86.2b-3c நோயொடு புலம்பலை கலங்கிப்

பிறருங் கேட்குந ருளர்கொல்

nōyoṭu pulamp_u alai kalaṅki

piṟarum kēṭkunar uḷar-kol

pain-with loneliness harass- agitated

other[um] hear-they(h.) they-are(h.)[kol]

"are there others too who hear [it],

agitated, harassed by loneliness along with pain?"

The final examples are intriguing since here the verbal root stands in for a form that does not actually exist in Tamil, namely a gerundive:

KT 63.2   செய்வினை *cey viṉai*   "the work to be done"

NA 24.8   செய்பொருள் *cey poruḷ*   "the wealth to be made"

TV 2.4   தொழுநீ ரிணையடி *toḻu nīr iṇai aṭi*

"the foot pair of a nature to be worshipped"

9b. Verbal Noun

Verbal nouns in -அல் -*al* and -(த்)தல் -*(t)tal* may be used as *nomina actionis* and as verbal complements, for example with வேண்டுதல் *vēṇṭutal*, "to be necessary", or with வல்லுதல் *vallutal*, "to be able to". In the oblique they stand for temporal/conditional ("when") or causal ("since") clauses, in the dative they have a final sense ("in order to"); verbal noun plus -உம் -*um* may be a sub-variety of temporal clause ("as soon as"). Strangely, verbal nouns too can be found in attributive position, with unlcear semantic impact. Note that the short form in -அல் -*al* is homophonous with the negative imperative: செயல் *ceyal*, "doing" or "don't do". To express anteriority there is a perfective verbal noun in -அமை -*amai*. The negative verbal noun is formed with the verbal root plus -ஆமை -*āmai*. A very different type is formed in homophony with the participial noun n.sg., both perfective and imperfective (செய்வது/ செய்தது *ceyvatu/ceytatu*), though very often the aspect does not seem to play a role. The most peculiar function of this n.sg. verbal noun develops in narrative texts where it can stand in for a finite verb with any person or number.

verbal root + -*al*	செயல் *ceyal*, "doing"
verbal root + *(t)tal*	செய்தல் *ceytal*, "doing", சேறல் *cel-tal*, "going"
perfective stem + -*amai*	செய்தமை *ceytamai*, "having done"
verbal root + -*āmai* (neg.)	செய்யாமை *ceyyāmai*, "not doing"
perfective n.sg.	செய்தது *ceytatu*, "doing" (homophonous to part.n. n.sg.)
imperfective n.sg.	செய்வது *ceyvatu*, "doing" (hom. to part.n. n.sg.)

Some verbal nouns are lexicalised like simple nouns: உணங்கல் *uṇaṅkal*, lit. "drying", but used to refer to something dried such as fish or corn. There are examples without clear etymology such as பைதல் *paital*, "suffering".

nomen actionis:

KT 353.3   ஆடுத லினிதே   *āṭutal iṉitē*

                bathing pleasant-it*ē*   "bathing is pleasant"

verbal complement:

KT 79.8   அகறல் வல்லு வோரே *akaṟal valluvōrē*

                departing able-he(h.)*ē*   "those who are able to depart"

final, especially if marked as dative:

KT 100.7   மணத்தற் கரிய பணைப்பெருந் தோளே

                maṇattaṟku ariya paṇai perum tōḷē

                uniting(dat.) difficult-they(n.pl.) bamboo big shoulder*ē*

                "they are difficult to unite with, the big bamboo shoulders."

attributive:

KT 79.3   அலங்க லுலவை *alaṅkal ulavai*   "swaying twig"

KT 35.5   தண்வரல் வாடை *taṇ varal vāṭai*   "cool coming north wind"

KT 28.4   அலமர லசைவளி *alamaral acai vaḷi*   "whirling moving wind"

[*figura etymologica*:

KT 276.4 அறிதலு மறியார் *aṟitalum aṟiyār*

        knowing*um* know-not-they(h.)   "they don't know at all"]

From the bhakti period onwards, a verbal noun plus -உ‌ம் -*um* can be used as a temporal clause: "as soon as"

TVM 4.6.10.3f.   வண்டுவராபதி

மன்னனை யேத்துமி னேத்துதலுந் தொழுதாடுமே

vaḷ tuvarāpati

maṉṉaṉai ēttumiṉ ēttutalum toḻut_u āṭumē

generous Dvāravatī

king praise(ipt.) praising[um] worshipped dancing- [she][e]

"Praise the generous king of Dvārakā;

as soon as you praise [him] she will dance in worship."

The oblique of the verbal noun in -அலின்/-(த)தலின் -*aliṉ/-(t)taliṉ* can form temporal/conditional clauses: "when, upon"

KT 167.5f.   இனிதெனக் கணவ னுண்டலி

னுண்ணிதின் மகிழ்ந்தன் றொண்ணுதன் முகனே

iṉit_u eṉa kaṇavaṉ uṇṭaliṉ

nuṇṇitiṉ makiḻntaṉr_u oḷ nutal mukaṉē

sweet-it say(inf.) husband eating[in]

fine-it[in] delighted-it bright forehead face

"when the husband ate it, saying 'it is excellent',

the face of [her with] bright forehead was subtly delighted."

Occasionally other cases are marked, as the accusative in the following example:

KT 305.4   களைதலை யவராற் றலரே

kaḷaitalai avar ārralarē

removing(acc.) he(h.) able-not-he(h.)[e]

"he is not able to remove."

the perfective verbal noun:

NA 282.4   காதலன் றந்தமை யறியாது

          kātalaṉ tantamai aṟiyātu

          lover having-given know-not

          "not knowing that the lover has given"

KT 92.2,5   பறவை │ ... │ இரைகொண் டமையின் விரையுமாற் செலவே

          paṟavai │ ... │ irai koṇṭamaiyiṉ viraiyumāl celavē

          bird │ ... │ food having-taken[in] hurrying-[āl] going[ē]

          "The birds, because of having taken up food, hurry in going."

the negative verbal noun in -ஆமை *-āmai*:

NA 50.1   அறியாமையி னன்னை யஞ்சி

          aṟiyāmaiyiṉ aṉṉai añci

          not-knowing[in] mother feared

          "being afraid of mother for her not knowing"

In this function, in some bhakti texts the suffix -ஆமை *-āmai* can be weakened into -ஆமே *-āmē*:

Tē 1.80.1.1f.   கற்றாங்கெரி யோம்பி கலியை வாராமே செற்றார் வாழ் தில்லை

          kaṟṟāṅku eri ōmpi kaliyai vārāmē

          ceṟṟār vāḻ tillai

          learned-like fire protected Kaliyuga(acc.) coming-not

          prevented-they(h.) live- Tillai

          "Tillai where live [the brahmins] who have prevented the Kaliyuga so that it may not come, protecting the fires like they have learned"

The verbal noun in neuter singular:

verbal noun as a subject:

NA 272.9   அம்பன் மூதூ ரறிந்தது

நோயா கின்றது நோயினும் பெரிதே

ampal mūt_u ūr a_rintatu

nōy ākin_ratu nōyi_num peritē.

rumour old village knowing

pain became-it pain[inum] big-it[ē].

"That the gossiping old village should know

has become a pain greater than pain."

relative construction of n.sg. verbal noun plus *ōr* (the numeral):

KT 377.4f.   நாடனொடு

செய்து கொண்டதோர் சிறுநன் னட்பே

nāṭa_noṭu

ceytu koṇṭatōr ci_ru nal naṭpē

land-he-with

made taken-it one little good friendship[ē]

"A good little friendship that has been made

with the man from the land."[30]

verbal noun in place of a finite verb:

PV 172.2f.

செருவில் | வலியார் வலியா ராய்மண் ணாள்வது

ceruvil | valiyār valiyār āy maṇ āḷvatu

---

[30] Note that this is an early example also of the auxiliary கொள்-தல் *koḷ-tal* in middle function: a friendship that has been made by the girl for herself with the man.

fight(loc.) │ strength-they(h.) strength-they(h.) become(abs.) earth
   ruling

"Those strong in battle, being strong, they rule the earth."

A similar impersonal construction occurs with the verbal nouns of
the செயல் *ceyal* or the செய்தல் *ceytal* types, but this is more
frequently found in theoretical texts:

TC 19i   இயற்கைப் பொருளை யிற்றெனக் கிளத்தல்

              iyaṟkai poruḷai irr̲ᵤ eṉa kiḷattal

              nature meaning(acc.) this-it say(inf.) stating

              "[There is] stating about the natural meaning: '[it] is
              such.'"

10. The Moods (Imperative, Optative, Subjunctive?)

Moods are weakly developed in Early Old Tamil and further weaken in the course of time. At the same time the old texts record a bewildering variety of forms for the same simple function of, say, imperative, probably letting shine through some of the original regional and dialectal variation that was gradually eliminated with the creation of a supra-regional poetic idiom. In short, we find many imperatives, traces of two very different varieties of optatives and probably an old, disintegrating paradigm of what might have been a subjunctive.

Imperative

<div align="center">imperative (2nd person)</div>

1a verbal root எழு *eḻu*		"rise!" (KT 11.4)
1b (plural) v.r. + *-īr*	சொலீர் *colīr*	"speak!" (Tē 2.2.8.3) post-Caṅkam
2. *-m-ō/-ē/eṉa* மொழிமோ *moḻimō*		"speak!" (KT 2.2)
	தெளிமே *teḷimē*	"let it be clear!" (KT 273.8)
3. *-miṉ*	ஓம்புமின் *ōmpumiṉ*	"beware!" (KT 184.2)
4. *-mati*	இனைமதி *iṉaimati*	"despair!" (KT 19.3)
5. *-āy*	கேளாய் *kēḷāy*	"hear!" (KT 390.1)
6. v.r. + *-um*	சொல்லும் *collum*	"speak!" (PK 4.3) post-Caṅkam

<div align="center">negative imperative (2nd person)</div>

7. v.r. + *-al*	செல்லல் *cellal*	"don't go"! (KT 179.3)

With the imperative it is especially difficult to distinguish between singular and plural, probably because many forms expressed degrees of politeness and/or familiarity. Definitely type 1, the root imperative, was impolite then as it is now, although an exception has to be made for the bhakti works where god is often addressed with the mere verbal root. Note that the plural suffix *-kaḷ(ē)* may be added to type 1b and 3: உரையீர்கள் *uraiyīrkaḷ*, "tell" (TVM 9.7.10.1),

அறிமின்களே *aṟimiṉkaḷē*, "know" (PK 201.4). Type 2 ending in simple -ம் *-m* is always followed by a particle -ஒ *-ō* or -ஏ *-ē*, unless embedded in direct speech with எ‌ன *eṉa*. Type 5 in -ஆய் *-āy* is homophonous with the negative 2nd person singular: கூறாய் *kūṟāy*, "you don't talk" or "talk!". Type 7, the negative imperative, is homophonous with the short form of the verbal noun: செயல் *ceyal*, "doing" or "don't do!". Later further imperative suffixes such as -மின் *-miṉ* may be added to the negative imperative: துன்னன்மின் *tuṉṉaṉmiṉ* "don't approach!" (Cint 799.4).

Perhaps an isolated form is a negative imperative plus a suffix of the 3rd person plural attested in NA 64.13: காணன்மார் *kāṇ-al-mār*, "may they not see".

The early bhakti texts and *Kīḻkkaṇakku* show the first occurrences of an imperative based on a perfective stem, although seemingly without aspectual impact. Note that these forms are homophonous with the perfective of the 2nd person: கண்டாய் *kaṇṭāy*, pl. கண்டீர் *kaṇṭīr*, "you saw" or "see!".

Optatives

One of the forms called optative in modern times is used frequently and with all persons and numbers:

1. *-iya*　　　வாழிய *vāḻiya*　　　　"may you live" (KT 19.3)

2. *-iyar*　　இறீஇயரோ *iṟīiyarō*　　"may they break" (KT 169.2)

It is homophonous with the second type of infinitive and has to be distinguished by context and its final position in the sentence. Like the infinitive, it is often metrically lengthened, and especially the form in -இயர் *-iyar* adds a particle -ஒ *-ō*, perhaps of politeness.

An isolated survivor of the same form in the first person plural may be உரைக்கியம் *uraikkiyam*, "we will tell" (TV 55.2).

Another independent form exists that is difficult to analyse, with many occurrences and presumably an optative impact:

perfective stem + -இசின் -*iciṉ*

It is used predominantly for 1st and 2nd, but occasionally also for 3rd person. As a rule of thumb it goes with a 2nd person unless another person is specified by adding a pronoun: உரைத்திசின் நெஞ்சே *uraitticiṉ neñcē*, "may you speak, heart" (KT 63.2), but யானே ... படர் கூர்ந்திசினே *yāṉē ... paṭar kūrnticiṉē*, "let me have affliction in abundance" (KT 216.3f.).

Subjunctive/Optative?

Finally there is the already mentioned row of further stray forms which adds up from two incomplete, but complementary paradigms, as suggested by Chevillard 1991. In my view they are best described as a subjunctive paradigm already weakening in the *Caṅkam* period itself and slowly merging into the "modern" optative in -க -*ka* for all persons. The main reason for that suggestion is that, although occurrences exist that seem to express a future, the majority of cases suggest a possibility, an uncertainty, a wish for something to happen.

1.sg. -*ku/kku* யான் எவன் செய்கோ *yāṉ evaṉ ceykō*,
          "what will/can I do?" (KT 25.2)

2.sg. -*(t)ti* எம்மை யுய்த்தியோ *emmai uyttiyō*,
          "will you send us?" (KT 63.4)

3.sg. -*ka* நாடன் வல்லே வருக *nāṭaṉ | vallē varuka*,
          "let him come fast" (KT 111.5f.)

1.pl. -*kam* நாணுகம் சிறிதே *nāṇukam ciṟitē*,
          "we may be a little ashamed" (KT 14.6)

   -*kum* கேட்கும் நின் குரலே *kēṭkum niṉ kuralē*,
          "we can hear your voice" (KT 163.5)

-tum	எவ்வழி யறிதும் *evvaḻi aṟitum*, "how can we know?" (KT 40.3)	
2.pl. *-(t)tir*	சேறிரோ *cēṟirō*, "will you go?" (KT 268.1)	
3.pl. *-ka*	பலரும் கூறுக *palarum kūṟuka*, "let many people talk" (KT 170.1)	

In the ubiquitous formulaic address of the female friend வாழி தோழி *vāḻi tōḻi*, literally "may you live, friend", but actually no more than a pronounced vocative "o friend", வாழி *vāḻi* might be analysed as an irregular (simplified) form in -தி *-ti*; cf. ஆழி *āḻi*, "immerse yourself" (TVM 1.4.10.4).

However, already in the *Caṅkam* corpus itself "modern" optative forms occur where -க *-ka* can be used for all persons and numbers:

KT 14.2f. சின்மொழி யரிவையைப் | பெறுக தில்லம்ம யானே

  cil moḻi arivaiyai | peṟuka-tillamma yāṉē

  few word girl(acc.) may-obtain[tillamma] I[ē]

  "Ah, let me obtain the girl of few words!"

KT 23.3 அகவன் மகளே பாடுக பாட்டே

  akaval makaḷē pāṭuka pāṭṭē

  Akaval woman[ē] may-sing song[ē]

  "soothsaying woman, please sing a song!"

Moreover, the 2nd person singular in -தி *-ti* sometimes goes in the direction of a request and is counted by most modern grammars among the imperative suffixes:

KT 63.2 செய்வினை கைம்மிக வெண்ணுதி

  cey viṉai kai mika eṇṇuti

  do- work action much consider-you

  "Consider well the work to be done!"

The corresponding negative forms certainly seem to go in the direction of a negative optative:

v.r.-*al-ka*   வாரற்க தில்ல *vāraṟka-tilla*, "may you not come" (KT 198.8)

v.r.-*ā-ti*   சிதையாதி *citaiyāti*, "may you not waste" (AiAi 42.4)

In the bhakti corpus, hybrid forms of indicative and subjunctive are found: என் செய்கேன் என் திரு மகட்கே *eṉ ceykēṉ eṉ tirumakaṭkē*, "what can I do for my splendid daughter?" (TVM 7.2.8.4), a clear sequel to the *Caṅkam* formula யான் எவன் செய்கோ *yāṉ evaṉ ceykō*, "what can I do?".

A presumable periphrastic construction of a perfective stem plus ஈதல் *ītal*, "to give", as root imperative or optative, is in existence, though rare: வந்தீக *va-nt$_u$-īka*, "come!" (NA 221.12), also attested with a short vowel சென்றிக *ceṉ-r$_u$-ika*, "go!" (NA 321.8). Corresponding forms continue in the early *Kīḻkkaṇakku*, *Kalittokai* and *Cilappatikāram*: வந்தீ *va-nt$_u$-ī*, "come!" (Kali 85.20), வந்தீக *vant$_u$-īka*, "may you come!" (Kali 86.10), எழுந்தீக *eḻu-nt$_u$-īka*, "may you rise!" (AiE 55.2), காய்ந்தீயல் *kāy-nt$_u$-ī-y-al*, "don't be angry!" (AiE 7.1), கேட்டீமின் *kēṭ-ṭ$_u$-īmiṉ*, "listen!" (Cilap 21.40). The negative counterpart, based on negative absolutive plus ஈதல் *ītal*, is fairly common in the *Caṅkam* corpus: செல்லாதீமோ *cellātīmō*, "don't go!" (KT 390.2), வாராதீமே *vārātīmē*, "don't come!" (NA 336.11).

In an intermittent period of *Kīḻkkaṇakku* into the bhakti period -ஏல் -*ēl* may be added to verbal roots and even finite forms in order to express a negative imperative: போகேல் *pōkēl*, "don't go!" (TVM 10.3.8.1), but also, and here with a 1st person plural, சொல்லுதுமேல் *collutumēl*, "let us not speak!" (PK 297.1), காய்ந்தீயேல் *kāy-nt$_u$-ī-y-ēl*, "don't be angry!" (AiE 7.1v).

11. Coordination and Question

Among the basic syntactic structures that are marked by particles there are coordination and interrogation. One of the few surviving forms from Old Tamil to modern days is the enclitic -உம் -*um*, used on word level for the indefinite ("any", "every"), for completion ("all"), for accentuation ("too") and on phrase level for coordination of nouns and clauses. Contrary to the rule taught in any modern Tamil grammar book, however, in Old Tamil -உம் -*um* also coordinates sentences. A question may be marked, first of all, by an interrogative pronoun, often in combination with -ஏ -*ē* to mark the end of the sentence or to focalise. The old interrogative particles are -ஓ -*ō* and -கொல் -*kol*, generally the former for questions of evaluation and the latter for questions of information. Both of them can be combined into the rhetorical question கொல்லோ *kollō*, while -ஓ -*ō* coordinated with another -ஓ -*ō* marks an "either-or" question. Note that from bhakti times onwards -ஏ -*ē* can also be used to mark a question, and very rarely -ஆ -*ā* (the modern interrogative) can be seen in the same function.

-உம் -*um*, "and"	enclitic, coordinates not only nouns and clauses, but also sentences; on all members or only on the last
interrogative pronoun	question
-ஏ -*ē*	end of a question and focalisation
-ஓ -*ō*	question (of evaluation)
-கொல் -*kol*	question (of information)
கொல்லோ *kollō*	rhetorical question
-ஏ -*ē*	interrogative particle in bhakti texts

noun coordination with -உம் -*um*:

KT 20.1   அருளு மன்பு நீக்கி

            aruḷum aṉpum nīkki

            consideration[um] love[um] discarded

            "having discarded consideration and love"

For the coordination of two items there is a possibility of using sociative -ஒடு -*oṭu* instead:

KT 190.1   நெறியிருங் கதுப்பொடு பெருந்தோ ணீவி

            neṟi irum katuppoṭu perum tōḷ nīvi

            curl- dark hair-with big shoulder stroked

            "stroking the big shoulders and the curly dark hair"

-உம் -*um* can occur on every member of a long row of coordinated nouns:

Poy 29.1f.   இறையு நிலனு மிருவிசும்புங் காற்று

            மறைபுனலுஞ் செந்தீயு மாவான்

            iṟaiyum nilaṉum iru vicumpum kāṟṟum

            aṟai puṉalum cem tīyum āvāṉ

            lord[um] ground[um] dark sky[um] wind[um]

            dash- flood[um] red fire[um] he-becomes

            "The lord, the ground, the dark sky, the wind

            the dashing flood and the red fire is he."

When -உம் -*um* coordinates clauses it is added to the nonfinite verb forms (infinitives or absolutives) to be coordinated:

Pēy 76.1f.+4   பொருப்பிடையே நின்றும் புனல்குளித்து மைந்து

            நெருப்பிடையே நிற்கவுநீர் வேண்டா ...

            லங்காவே தீவினைக ளாய்ந்து

*porupp*ᵤ *iṭaiyē ninṟum puṉal kuḷittum aintu*

*nerupp*ᵤ *iṭaiyē niṟkavum nīr vēṇṭā ...*

akkāvē tī viṉaikaḷ āyntu

height middleᵉ̄ stoodᵘᵐ flood bathedᵘᵐ five

fire middleᵉ̄ stand(inf.)ᵘᵐ you(pl.) need-not(a.)

pass-away-not(n.pl.)ᵉ̄ evil deeds dwindled

"Without that you must stand on heights, bathe in

floods and stand between five fires, ...

[your] evil deeds will dwindle [and] pass away."

When -உம் *-um* coordinates sentences, it is usually added to the first member of the main clause (that is, not to an attribute but to the subject or object).

simple coordination:

KT 31.4,6   யானுமோ ராடுகள மகளே ...

பீடுகெழு குரிசிலுமோ ராடுகள மகனே

yāṉum ōr āṭukaḷam makaḷē ...

pīṭu keḻu kuricilum ōr āṭukaḷam makaṉē

Iᵘᵐ one dance-floor daughterᵉ̄   ...

excellence have- lordᵘᵐ one dance-floor sonᵉ̄

"I am a woman on the dance floor ...

and the excellent lord is a man on the dance floor."

KT 51.3-6   சேர்ப்பனை

யானுங் காதலென் யாயுநனி வெய்ய

ளெந்தையுங் கொடீஇயர் வேண்டு

மம்ப லூரு மவனொடு மொழிமே

                              cērppaṉai

yāṉum kātaleṉ yāyum naṉi veyyaḷ

entaiyum koṭīyar vēṇṭum

ampal ūrum avaṉoṭu moḻimē

                                coast-he(acc.)

I[um] love-I my-mother[um] abundant hot-she

my-father[um] give must(hab.fut.)

rumour village[um] he-with it-speaks[ē]

"The man from the coast,

I love him and my mother is very keen on him

and my father must give [me to him]

and [even] the gossiping village is speaking in his favour."

However, poetic license comes into play for example if one of the coordinated clauses does not contain the required element or for the sake of poetic parallelism (-உம் *-um* added to the first foot of the line).

KT 17   மாவென மடலு மூர்ப பூவெனக்

          குவிமுகி ழெருக்கங் கண்ணியுஞ் சூடுப

          மறுகி னார்க்கவும் படுப

          பிறிது மாகுப காமங்காழ்க் கொளினே

          mā eṉa maṭalum ūrpa pū eṉa

          kuvi mukiḻ erukkam kaṇṇiyum cūṭupa

          maṟukiṉ ārkkavum paṭupa

          piṟitum ākupa kāmam kāḻkkoḷiṉē

          horse say Palmyra-stem[um] they-mount flower say

          heap- bud Yarcum chaplet[um] they-wear

          street[in] shout[um] they-suffer

          other-it[um] they-become desire coming-to-a-climax-if[ē]

"They will mount palmyra stems as horses and they

will wear chaplets of heaped Yarcum buds as flowers

and they will be shouted at in the streets

and another thing will happen, when desire is over-ripe."

KT 113.1f.   ஊர்க்கு மணித்தே பொய்கை பொய்கைக்குச்

சேய்த்து மன்றே சிறுகான் யாறே

ūrkkum aṇittē poykai poykaikku

cēyttum aṉṟē ciṟu kāṉ yāṟē

village(dat.)ᵘᵐ close-itᵉ pond pond(dat.)

distance-itᵘᵐ not-so-itᵉ little forest riverᵉ

"Close to the village is the pond and from the pond

not far is the little forest river."

-உம் *-um* only on the second member:

KT 62.4f.   நல்லோண் மேனி

முறியினும் வாய்வது முயங்கற்கு மினிதே

nallōḷ mēṉi

muṟiyiṉum vāyvatu muyaṅkaṟkum iṉitē

good-she body

shootⁱⁿᵘᵐ more-excellent-it embracing(dat.)ᵘᵐ pleasant-itᵉ

"The body of the good one,

it surpasses a sprout [in softness] and is pleasant to

embrace."

KT 74.2f.,5   குன்ற நாடன்

யாந்தன் படர்ந்தமை யறியான் றானும் ...

சாயின னென்ப

kuṉṟam nāṭaṉ

yām taṉ paṭarntamai aṟiyāṉ tāṉum ...

cāyiṉaṉ eṉpa

          hill land-he

we him- thought-we(acc.) know-not-he self[um] ...

he-was-emaciated they-say

"The man from the hilly land

does not know that we have been thinking of him

and he himself has become emaciated, they say."

    Rarely coordination can be asyndetic, that is, coordinate unrelated sentences of different syntactic structure:

KT 161.1f.,4 பொழுது மெல்லின்று பெயலு மோவாது

              கழுதுகண் பனிப்ப வீசு மதன்றலை ...

              அன்னா வென்னு மன்னையு மன்னோ

              poḻutum el iṉṟu peyalum ōvātu

              kaḻutu kaṇ paṇippa vīcum ataṉṟalai ...

              aṉṉā eṉṉum aṉṉaiyum aṉṉō

time[um] light is-not raining[um] stop-not-it

demon eye shiver throwing- that(obl.+loc.) ...

mother(voc.) saying- mother[um] alas!

"Time without light and the rain without stopping

hurls down, so that demon eyes shiver, and on top of that

mother who says "mother!", alas."

interrogative pronoun:

KT 158.6   இஃதெவனே   *iḵt_u evaṉē*

           this what[e]   "What is this?"

KT 18.3   யாரஃ தறிந்திசி னோரே   *yār ak̲t̲ᵤ a̲ri̲ntici̲n̲ōrē*

               who that known-they(h.)ᵉ̄   "Who are those who
                                                  understand that?"

inter.pron. + focalisation:

KT 140.4f.   எவ்வம் │ யாங்கறிந் தன்றிவ் வழுங்க லூரே

               evvam │ yāṅk̲ᵤ a̲rinta̲n̲r̲u i a̲luṅkal ūrē

               trouble │ what it-knew this- noise villageᵉ̄

               "What has it understood of the trouble, this noisy
               village?"

questions with -கொல் *-kol:*

KT 28.1   முட்டு வேன்கொ றாக்கு வேன்கொல்

               muṭṭuvē̲n̲-kol tākkuvē̲n̲-kol

               I-attackᵏᵒˡ I-strike-againstᵏᵒˡ

               "Shall I attack? Shall I strike?"

KT 177.4f.   இன்றவர் │ வருவர்கொல் வாழி தோழி

               in̲r̲ᵤ avar │ varuvar-kol vā̲li tō̲li

               today he(h.) │ he-comes(h.)ᵏᵒˡ live(sub.) friend

               "Will he come today, o friend?"

Also -கொல் *-kol* and -ஓ *-ō* can appear in coordination with -ஏ *-ē* for
focalisation:

KT 5.1   அதுகொ றோழி காம நோயே

               atu-kol tō̲li kāma nōyē

               thatᵏᵒˡ friend desire painᵉ̄

               "Is that, friend, the pain of desire?"

KT 160.6   இஃதோ தோழிநங் காதலர் வரைவே

               ik̲tō tō̲li nam kātalar varaivē

this[o] friend our- lover(h.) marriage[e]

"Is this, friend, the marriage with our lover?"

KT 2.4f.   அறிவை கூந்தலி

நறியவு முளவோநீ யறியும் பூவே

arivai kūntaliṉ

naṟiyavum uḷavō nī aṟiyum pūvē

young-woman tresses[in]

fragrant-they(n.pl.)[um] they-are(n.pl.)[o] you knowing- flower[e]

"Do [flowers] exist that are as fragrant as the tresses

of the young woman, among the flowers you know?

Double -ஒ -*ō* can be employed for either-or:

KT 142.2f.   பூங்கண் பேதை

தானறிந் தனளோ விலளோ

pūm kaṇ pētai

tāṉ aṟintaṉaḷō ilaḷō

flower eye innocence

self she-knew[o] not-she[o]

"The flower-eyed innocence,

did she know or did she not?"

A rhetorical question, that is, a question that does not really ask for information but is meant to vent the speaker's feelings, can be marked with கொல்லோ *kollō*:

KT 16.1   உள்ளார் கொல்லோ தோழி   *uḷḷār-kollō tōḻi*

remember-not-he(h.)[kollō]   "Does he not
                                 remember, friend?"

KT 279.4   இதுபொழு தாகவும் வாரார் கொல்லோ
                itu poḻut_u ākavum vārār-kollō
                this time become(inf.)[um] come-not-he(h.)[kollō]
                "Although the time is this, will he not come?"

KT 180.5   எய்தினர் கொல்லோ பொருளே   *eytiṉar-kollō poruḷē*
            he-obtained[kollō] wealth[ē]   "Did he obtain it –
                                                       wealth?"

In bhakti texts also -ஏ -*ē* may be found as an interrogative particle:

Poy 95.2f.   மூவாத │ மாகதிகண் செல்லும் வகையுண்டே
                mūvāta │ mā kati-kaṇ cellum vakai uṇṭē
                age-not great way(loc.) going- means it-is[ē]
                "Is there a means to go on the ageless great way?"

12. Embedded Clauses with *ākutal*, *eṉṉutal* and *pōl-tal*

As a rule, Old Tamil has one finite verb per sentence. However, there are four productive exceptions, namely an insertion (of an imperative or optative: காண் *kāṇ*, "see!", என்ப *eṉpa*, "they say"), a *muṟṟeccam* (a finite form standing in for a nonfinite one), a double verb form (such as some forms of negation), and finally embedding – a small number of verbs have special dispensation to be preceded by a finite form. The former three are treated in Chapter 15a; both on serial verbs and embedding, see Steever 1988, 1993.

The three primary embedding verbs are:

என் *eṉ*, "to say"	verbal root (என் *eṉ*), infinitive (என *eṉa*), absolutive *(என்று *eṉṟu*)*, perfective *peyareccam (என்ற *eṉṟa*)*, finite forms [occasionally **other *verba dicendi***]: direct speech or thought
ஆகு *āku*, "to become"	verbal root (ஆ *ā*), absolutive (ஆகி/ஆய் *āki/āy*), infinitive (ஆக *āka*), perfective *peyareccam* (ஆய/ஆகிய *āya/ākiya*), verbal noun (ஆகல்/ஆகுதல் *ākal/ākutal*): concomitance and attribution ("when", "since", "that")
போல் *pōl*, "to be similar"	verbal root (போல் *pōl*), absolutive (போன்று *pōṉṟu*), infinitive (போல *pōla*), perfective *peyareccam* (போன்ற *pōṉṟa*): comparative clause; habitual future (போலும் *pōlum*): "it seems that"

direct speech or thought:

KT 82.2   அழாஅ லென்றுநம் மழுதகண் டுடைப்பார்
           aḻāal eṉṟu nam aḻuta kaṇ tuṭaippār

don't-cry said our- cried- eye he-wipes(h.)

"'Don't cry!' he says [and] wipes our eyes that cried."

KT 141.1-3   வளைவாய்ச் சிறுகிளி விளைதினைக் கடீஇயர்

செல்கென் றோளே யன்னை யெனநீ

சொல்லி னெவனோ தோழி

vaḷai vāy ciṟu kiḷi viḷai tiṉai kaṭīyar

celka eṉṟōḷē aṉṉai eṉa nī

colliṉ evaṉō tōḻi

curve- mouth little parakeet ripen- millet chase(inf.)

may-go said-she^{ē} mother say(inf.) you

say-if what^{ō} friend

"What if [you] said, friend:

'Mother is one who said, 'let her go

in order to chase from the ripening millet

the little parakeets with curved beaks''?"

KT 187.5   வலிய னென்னாது மெலியுமென் னெஞ்சே

valiyaṉ eṉṉātu meliyum eṉ neñcē

hard-he say-not softening-it my- heart^{ē}

"Without saying 'he is hard' my heart is softening."

The quotative verb என்னுதல் *eṉṉutal* may on occasion be replaced by an other *verbum dicendi*:

KT 148.6   கனவோ மற்றிது வினவுவல் யானே

kaṉavō maṟṟ$_u$ itu viṉavuval yāṉē

dream^{ōmaṟṟu} this I-ask I^{ē}

"'Is this but a dream?' I ask."

An additional possible function of the quotative verb is that of concluding an enumeration:

KT 32.1-3   காலையும் பகலுங் கையறு மாலையு

              மூர்துஞ்சு யாமமும் விடியலு மென்றிப்

              பொழுதிடை தெரியிற் பொய்யே காமம்

              kālaiyum pakalum kai aṟu mālaiyum

              ūr tuñcu yāmamum viṭiyalum enṟ_u i

              poḻut_u iṭai teriyin poyyē kāmam

              morning^{um} midday^{um} action cease- evening^{um}

              village sleep- midnight^{um} dawn^{um} said this-

              time-of-day between distinguish-if lie^ē desire

              "Morning, midday, action-ending evening,

              midnight when the village sleeps and dawn –

              when one [still] distinguishes between these times,

              desire is only a lie."

An additional special function of the embedding verbs is as a quasi postposition in the sense of taking something for something else (என *eṉa*) or using something as an instrument (ஆ, ஆக *ā, āka*):

KT 17.1f.மாவென மடலு மூர்ப. பூவெனக்

              குவிமுகி ழெருக்கங் கண்ணியுஞ் சூடுப

              mā eṉa maṭalum ūrpa. pū eṉa

              kuvi mukiḻ erukkam kaṇṇiyum cūṭupa

              horse say(inf.) Palmyra-stem^{um} they-mount flower say(inf.)

              heap- bud Yarcum chaplet^{um} they-wear

              "They will mount palmyra stems as horses and as flowers

              they will wear chaplets of Yarcum in heaped buds."

Poy 1.1-3   வையந் தகளியா வார்கடலே நெய்யாக

வெய்ய கதிரோன் விளக்காகச் – செய்ய

சுடராழியா னடிக்கே சூட்டினேன் சொன்மாலை

vaiyam takaḷi ā vār kaṭalē ney āka

veyya katirōṉ viḷakkᵤ āka – ceyya

cuṭar āḻiyāṉ aṭikkē cūṭṭiṉēṉ col mālai

earth bowl become- flow- sea oil become(inf.)

hot ray-he light become(inf.) red

glow- discus-he foot(dat.)ᵉ I-put-on word garland

"With the earth as the bowl, the flowing sea as oil

[and] him with hot rays as the light I put a word garland

on the feet of him with the red-glowing discus."

The use of the infinitive ஆக *āka* in an embedding construction allows more or less the same range of shades as the verbal root + *a*-type of infinitive sub-clause (cf. infinitive type 1, p. 93f.), with the advantage of being able to clearly mark person, number, aspect and mood:

"when"

KT 265.7f.   யான்றனக் குரைத்தனெ னாக

தானா ணினன்

yāṉ taṉakkᵤ uraittaṉeṉ āka

tāṉ nāṇiṉaṉ

I him(dat.) I-told become(inf.)

he he-was-ashamed

"When I told him

he himself became ashamed."

"so that"

KT 172.3f.   எமிய மாக வீங்குத் துறந்தோர்

தமிய ராக வினியர் கொல்லோ

emiyam āka īṅku tuṟantōr

tamiyar āka iṉiyar-kollō

our-we become(inf.) here abandoned-he(h.)

alone-he(h.) become(inf.) pleasant-he(h.)[kollō]

"He who abandoned [us] here so that we are on our own,

is it pleasing to him to be alone?"

The absolutive ஆகி *āki* allows the correlation of independent events and can often be rendered by "since":

KT 329.5,7 பயிலிரு ணடுநாட் டுயிலரி தாகி ...

நன்மலர் மழைக்கணிற் கெளியவாற் பனியே

payil iruḷ naṭunāḷ tuyil arit_u āki ...

nal malar maḻai kaṇir_ku eḷiyavāl paṉiyē

be-dense- darkness midnight sleep difficult-it become(a.)...

good blossom rain eye(dat.) easy-they(n.pl.)[āl] dew[ē]

"Since sleep is difficult at midnight in the dense darkness,

tears [come] easy indeed to the rain eyes, good blossoms."

"since" (~ apposition)

NA 215.8f.   இன்றுநீ யிவணை யாகி யெம்மொடு

தங்கி னெவனோ தெய்ய

iṉr_u nī ivaṇai āki emmoṭu

taṅkiṉ evaṉō teyya

today you here-you become(abs.) us-with

stay-if what[ō teyya]

"Since you are here today,

what if you stayed with us, please?"

The perfective *peyareccam* ஆய/ஆகிய *āya/ākiya* can be used for specified attribution.

attribution

KT 181.1,7   இதுமற் றெவனோ தோழி ...

பெருமுது பெண்டிரே மாகிய நமக்கே

itu-marr_u_ evan_ō tōl_i ...

peru mutu peṇṭirēm ākiya namakkē

this^marru what^ō friend ...

big old women-we become(p.)- us(dat.)^ē

"What is this, friend

to us who have become great old women?"

temporal clause

KT 178.5-7   யாநுமக் | கரிய மாகிய காலைப்

பெரிய நோன்றனிர்.

yām numakk_u_ | ariyam ākiya kālai

periya nōn_ran_ir.

we you(dat.pl.) | difficult-we become(p.)- time

big-they(n.pl) you-suffered(pl.).

"At the time we were difficult for you [to reach],

you suffered greatly."

Less frequently the verbal noun ஆகல்/ஆகுதல் *ākal/ākutal* can be found to express indirect speech or thought content: "that"

KT 386.4-6   மாலை

நிலம்பரந் தன்ன புன்கணொடு

புலம்புடைத் தாகுத லறியேன் யானே

mālai

nilam parantaṉṉa puṉkaṇoṭu

pulampᵤ uṭaittᵤ ākutal aṟiyēṉ yāṉē

                evening

ground spread-like sorrow-with

loneliness possess-it becoming know-not-I Iᵉ

"That the evening would possess loneliness

along with sorrow as if spread on the ground

                            I did not know."

Embedded comparison clauses with போல்-தல் *pōl-tal* are considerably less frequent:

KT 147.3f.   நுண்பூண் மடந்தையைத் தந்தோய் போல

                வின்றுயி லெடுப்புதி கனவே

                nuṇ pūṇ maṭantaiyai tantōy pōla

                iṉ tuyil eṭupputi kaṉavē

                fine ornament girl(acc.) given-you be-similar(inf.)

                pleasant sleep you-arouse(sub.) dreamᵉ

                "As if you brought [my] girl with fine ornaments

                you would rouse [me] from sweet sleep, dream."

AN 177.13   வல்லே வருவர் போலும்

                vallē varuvar pōlum

                quickly come-he(h.) it-seems

                "He will come quickly, it seems."

13. Conditional (Factual and Hypothetical), Concessive, Causal Clauses

Old Tamil starts off with two clear forms for the conditional, one the simple verbal root plus the suffix -இன் -*in*, the other based on the frozen conditional form of the embedding verb ஆகுதல் *ākutal*, i.e., ஆயின் *āyin*, "if". The former does not allow for marking aspect, tense or mood, but can take a subject; the latter embeds a finite verb. Occasionally the frozen conditional of the embedding verb என்னுதல் *ennutal* is already found in the same function, i.e., எனின் *enin*, "if". From the early *Kīḻkkaṇakku* corpus onwards and for a number of centuries we find a bewildering variety of further suffixes and postpositions that express conditional, some on the verbal root as was the case with -இன் -*in*, some on finite forms, and some on the absolutive, as will be the case later. Almost all of them are transitional, but one of them is the one form destined to make it into modern formal Tamil, that is, absolutive plus -ஆல் -*āl*. As mentioned before on p. 95, the distinction between a conditional and a temporal clause has never been clear-cut, and often "if" rather means "when".

By adding -உம் -*um* to any conditional form a concessive can be formed ("although"), but also absolutive or infinitive plus -உம் -*um* can stand either in coordination or for a concessive.

One further form of the embedding verb ஆகுதல் *ākutal*, the oblique of the verbal noun, under the two forms ஆகலின் *ākalin* and ஆதலின் *ātalin*, is frozen into a postposition that allows forming causal clauses ("because"). Moreover there are a few demonstrative pronouns from the அ- *a-* stem that are frozen into quasi conjunctions, namely ஆனால் *āṉāl,* அதனால் *ataṉāl* ("therefore"), அதன்றலை *ataṉṟalai* ("moreover", literally "on top of that") and அதனெதிர் *ataṉetir* ("in view of that").

forms of the conditional

verbal root + -இன் -*in̠* (strong verbs + *-ppin̠*)	பொய்ப்பின் *poyppin̠*, "if he lies"
finite verb + ஆயின் *āyin̠* (embedding)	வாரார் ஆயின் *vārār āyin̠*, "if he does not come"
finite verb + எனின் *en̠in̠* (embedding)	(rare in the old corpus)
finite verb + ஆகில் *ākil* (embedding)	later (bhakti)
verbal root + -இல் -*il*, -ஏல் -*ēl*	வருந்தேல் *varuntēl*, "if x suffers"; transitional
(strong verbs + ப்பில்/க்கில் -*ppil*/-*kkil*, ப்பேல்/க்கேல்-*ppēl*/-*kkēl*)	உகக்கில் *ukakkil*, "if x rejoices"
(finite verb + -ஏல்/-ஆல் -*ēl*/-*āl*)	transitional
abs. + -ஆல் -*āl*	செய்தால் *ceytāl*; post-*Caṅkam*[31] up to modern

forms of the concessive

abs. + -உம் -*um*	செய்தும் *ceytum*; coordinated or concessive
inf. + -உம் -*um*	செய்யவும் *ceyyavum*; ig.
v.r. + -இனும் -*in̠um* (strong verbs + -*ppin̠um*)	
f.v. + ஆயினும் *āyin̠um* (embedding)	
f.v. + எனினும் *en̠in̠um* (embedding)	(rare in the old corpus)
f.v. + ஆகிலும் *ākilum* (embedding)	later (bhakti)
f.v. + -ஏலும் -*ēlum* (embedding)	later (bhakti)
v.r. + -இலும் -*ilum* (strong verbs + -*ppilum*)	transitional
abs. + -ஆலும் -*ālum*	post-*Caṅkam* up to modern

---

[31] A few isolated forms such a *kaṇṭāl* in PN 390.25 can be found.

postpositions and conjunctions of reasoning

ஆகலின்/ஆதலின் *ākaliṉ/ātaliṉ*   causal clause: "because"

ஆனால்/அதனால் *āṉāl/ataṉāl*   "therefore"

அதன்றலை *ataṉṟalai*   "moreover"

அதனெதிர் *ataṉetir*   "in view of that"

conditional clauses

-இன் *-iṉ* type impersonal:

KT 102.1   உள்ளி னுள்ளம் வேமே

              uḷḷiṉ uḷḷam vēmē

              remember-if inside burn(hab.fut.)ᵉ̄

              "when remembering, the inside burns."

-இன் *-iṉ* type unmarked for subject:

KT 280.4f.   ஒருநாள் புணரப் புணரி

              னரைநாள் வாழ்க்கையும் வேண்டலென் யானே

              oru nāḷ puṇara puṇariṉ

              arai nāḷ vāḻkkaiyum vēṇṭaleṉ yāṉē

              one day unite(inf.) unite-if

              half day lifeᵘᵐ I-need-not Iᵉ̄

              "If I can be in union [with her] for a single day,

              I will not need living for [another] half day."

-இன் *-iṉ* type marked for subject:

KT 316.2f.   அன்னை யறியி│னுளெனோ வாழி தோழி

              aṉṉai aṟiyiṉ│uḷeṉō vāḻi tōḻi

              mother know-if│be-Iᵒ live(sub.) friend

              "If mother gets to know, will I [still] exist, friend?"

ஆயின் *āyiṉ* type:

KT 174.5f.   பொருள்வயிற் பிரிவா ராயினிவ் வுலகத்துப்

பொருளே மன்ற பொருளே

poruḷvayiṉ pirivār āyiṉ i ulakattu

poruḷē-maṉṟa poruḷē

wealth-for he-separates(h.) if this- world-

wealth^{ē maṉṟa} wealth^ē

"If he separates for the sake of wealth, in this world

truly only wealth is wealth."

ஆயின் *āyiṉ* type hypothetical:

KT 148.5f.   காரன் றென்றி யாயின்

கனவோ மற்றிது வினவுவல் யானே

kār aṉṟ_u eṉṟi āyiṉ

kaṉavō maṟṟ_u itu viṉavuval yāṉē

rainy-season is-not-so you-say(sub.) if

dream^{ō maṟṟu} this I-ask I^ē

"If you were to say 'this is not the rainy season',

I should ask 'is this but a dream?'"

ஆயின் *āyiṉ* type with past tense and hypothetical:

KT 350.2f.   செல்லா தீமெனச்

சொல்லின மாயிற் செல்வர் கொல்லோ

cellātīm-eṉa

colliṉam āyiṉ celvar-kollō

don't go say(inf.)

we-spoke if go-he(h.)^{kollō}

"If we were to say 'don't go!',

would he [still] go?"

KT 274.8   அணிமுலை யாக முள்கினஞ் செலினே

aṇi mulai ākam uḷkiṉam celiṉē

adorn- breast bosom we-remembered go-if$^{\text{e}}$

"If we were to go, we would remember [her] bosom

with adorning breasts."

ஆயின் *āyiṉ* type as subject clause:

KT 98.1-3   அவர் │ துன்ன சென்று செப்புநர் பெறினே

நன்றுமன் வாழி தோழி

avar │ tunna cenru ceppunar perinē

nanru-man vāḻi tōḻi

he(h.) │ approach(inf.) gone saying-he(h.) obtain-if$^{\text{e}}$

good-it$^{\text{man}}$ live(sub.) friend

"If we were to obtain someone who goes to approach

[and] talks to him, that would be good indeed, o friend."

எனின் *eṉiṉ* type:

NA 334.8f.   மின்னுவசி விளக்கத்து வருமெனி

னென்னோ தோழிநம் மின்னுயிர் நிலையே

minnu vaci viḷakkattu varum enin

en-ō tōḻi nam in uyir nilai-ē

lightning split lamp- coming- say-if

what$^{\text{o}}$ friend our- pleasant life state$^{\text{e}}$

"If he comes with a split of lightning for a lamp,

what, friend, will be the state of our sweet life?"

ஆகில் *ākil* type:

Poy 88.4   என்னாகி லென்னே யெனக்கு

           eṉ ākil eṉṉē eṉakku

           what if what^e me(dat.)

           "If anything should happen, what [is it] to me?"

finite verb plus -ஏல் *-ēl*:

AiAi 9.2   அழிய வேண்டா தெரிதியேல்

           aḻiya vēṇṭā teritiyēl

           be-desolate(inf.) need-not(n.sg.) understand-you(sub)^{ēl}

           "If you understood, it wouldn't be necessary [for you]
           to be desolate."

verbal root plus -இல் *-il*:

Pēy 82.1   உணரி லுணர்வரியன்

           uṇaril uṇarv$_u$ ariyaṉ

           perceive-if perception difficult-he

           "When perceiving, he is difficult to perceive."

absolutive plus -ஆல் *-āl*:

Pēy 25.1   தொழுதால் பழுதுண்டே

           toḻutāl paḻut$_u$ uṇṭē

           worshipped-if mistake it-is^e

           "If you worship, is it a mistake?"

concessives

absolutive plus -உம் *-um*:

KT 64.4f.   நோயே மாகுத லறிந்துஞ்

           சேயர் தோழி செய்நாட் டோரே

nōyēm ākutal aṟintum

cēyar tōḻi cēy nāṭṭōrē.

pain-we becoming known[um]

distance-he(h.) friend distance land-he(h.)[ē]

"Even though knowing that we would feel pain,

he is distant, friend, in a distant land is he."

infinitive plus -உம் *-um*:

KT 311.2f.   வலவன் றாங்கவு

நில்லாது கழிந்த கல்லென் கடுந்தேர்

valavaṉ tāṅkavum

nillātu kaḻinta kalleṉ kaṭum tēr

charioteer restrain(inf.)[um]

stand-not passed-by noisy fast chariot

"Even though restrained by the charioteer

[there was] a noisy fast chariot that passed by without
stopping."

verbal root plus -இன் *-iṉ*:

KT 210.4,6   எழுகலத் தேந்தினுஞ் சிறிதென் றோழி ...

விருந்துவரக் கரைந்த காக்கையது பலியே

eḻu kalattᵤ ēntiṉum ciṟitᵤ eṉ tōḻi ...

viruntu vara karainta kākkaiyatu paliyē

seven pot- offer-if-even little-it my- friend ...

guest come(inf.) cried- crow(gen.) offering[ē]

"Even if we were to offer seven pots [of rice], small,
my friend,

would it be as a gift to the crow that cawed that a guest
would come."

ஆயினும் *āyiṉum*:

KT 42.1,4   காம மொழிவ தாயினும் ...

              எந்தொடர்புந் தேயுமோ

              kāmam oḻivatu āyiṉum ...

              em toṭarpum tēyumō

              desire ceasing-it if-even ...

              our- attachment^um dwindling-ō

              "Even if passion is somthing that ceases,

              will our attachment dwindle, too?"

ஆகிலும் *ākilum*:

Poy 55.1f.   அவன்றம ரெவ்வினைய ராகிலு மெங்கோ |

              னவன்றமரே

              avaṉ tamar e viṉaiyar ākilum em kōṉ │ avaṉ tamarē

              he their-people(h.) what- karma if-even our- king │ his

              people^ē

              "His people, whatever [their] karma, are our king's

              people."

-ஏலும் *-ēlum*: Note that -ஏல்/-ஏலும் *-ēl/-ēlum* may even occur with predicate nouns:

Pēy 81.1f. நெஞ்சா நினைப்பரிய னேலு நிலைபெற்றென்

              னெஞ்சமே பேசாய்

              neñcāl niṉaipp_u ariyaṉēlum nilai peṟṟu eṉ

              neñcamē pēcāy

              heart(inst.) thinking difficult-he^ēlum position obtained my-

              heart^ē speak(ipt.)

              "Though he is difficult to think of by the heart, take a stand,

              my heart, speak."

causal clause with ஆகலின் *ākaliṉ*:

NA 99.9f. பிடவுங் கொன்றையுங் கோடலு

மடவ வாகலின் மலர்ந்தன பலவே

piṭavum koṉraiyum kōṭalum

maṭava ākaliṉ malarntaṉa palavē

large-flowered-jasmine[um] laburnum[um] white-Malabar-lily[um]

ignorant-they(n.pl.) because they-flowered(n.pl.) any(n.pl.)[ē]

"large-flowered jasmine, laburnum and white Malabar lily,

because they are foolish they have flowered, many [of

them]."

அதனால் *ataṉāl*: "therefore"

NA 67.9f.   எமரும் வேட்டம் புக்கனர். அதனா

றங்கி னெவனோ தெய்ய

emarum vēṭṭam pukkaṉar. ataṉāl

taṅkiṉ evaṉō teyya

our-they(h.) hunt they-entered. therefore

stay-if what[ō]

"All our people have entered the hunt. Therefore,

what if you stayed?"

14. Negation

Old Tamil knows no less than six distinct forms of negation. It is not clear whether they are vestiges of older regional forms or whether there are fine semantic distinctions between them which remain elusive today. There were two verbs of negation to begin with; the difference between them was clear-cut since one negated quality and the other negated existence, but the border between them became blurred in the course of time:

அல் *al*, "not to be so"　　(complementary to இரு *iru* "to be present")

இல் *il*, "not to be"　　　(complementary to உள் *uḷ* "to exist")

Derived from இல் *il* there is an indeclinable form இல்லை *illai*, "not", valid for all persons, attested already, if rarely, in the *Caṅkam* corpus and the main negation form surviving until today. All other forms are inflected. With one exception negation does not mark aspect or tense. The simplest form of negative is the mere verbal root, without aspectual suffix, followed directly by the pronominal ending for person and number. The same can be done with the negative stem (செய்யாது *ceyyātu*). Next, the negative verbal root அல் *al* can be added between the verbal root and the pronominal suffix. The use of இல் *il* is more difficult to describe. To begin with, it was employed in several subtypes of nominal negation, denoting people who are without something. There also was an additional construction of perfective aspect plus இல் *il* followed by a pronominal suffix, more frequent from early bhakti on; however, the aspect does not appear to influence semantics. Finally, for the cases where it seemed important to mark aspect, tense or mood, there was a double verb form consisting of an ordinary positive finite verb followed by the corresponding form of அல் *al*. With negative forms the distinction between finite form and participial noun is almost totally absent;

all forms are ambiguous, except for those that make use of pronominal endings with the vowel ஒ/ஓ *o/ō*.

(1. இல்லை *illai*	"not"	up to modern Tamil)
2. zero suffix	v.r.-pron.suff.	அறியேன் *aṟiyēṉ*, "I don't know"
3. negative stem	v.r.-*ā*-pron.suff.	ஓவாது *ōvātu*, "it does not stop"
4. -அல் -*al* as a suffix	v.r.-*al*-pron.suff.	காணலர் *kāṇalar*, "they don't see"[32]
5. -இல் -*il* as a suffix	perf. stem-*il*-pron.suff.	கொண்டிலை *koṇṭilai*, "you do not take" (late)
6. double verb forms	positive + negative form	ஒள்வாள் அல்லள் *oḷvāḷ allaḷ*, "she will not agree"

For type 2 in the third person there is a marked preference for forms with -ஆ -*ā* before the ending (செய்யான் *ceyyāṉ*, செய்யாள் *ceyyāḷ*, செய்யார் *ceyyār*), which might be analysed in two ways, namely either as a verbal root plus pronominal suffix, to which the rarer alternative would be செய்யன் *ceyyaṉ*, etc., or, tentatively, as a short negative stem செய்யா *ceyyā* plus just a pronominal ending -ன் -*ṉ*, that is, as an intermediate form between type 2 and 3. Note that type 3 is mostly restricted to negative neuter singular and plural and to negative participial nouns: அறியாதோர் *aṟiyātōr*, "those who do not know". The mere negative stem is one of the most ambiguous forms that exist: செய்யா *ceyyā* corresponds to neg. *pey*. ("who does

---

[32] A variant form with -(க்)கல் -*(k)kal* instead of -அல்(ல்) -*al(l)* is fairly well attested in the *Kalittokai*: அறிகல்லாய் *aṟikallāy*, "you don't know" (Kali 47.17).

not do"), neg. abs. ("not having done"), negative n.sg. ("it does/did not do") and negative n.pl. ("they do/did not do").

இல்லை *illai*:

KT 25.1   யாரு மில்லை   *yārum illai*
               who[um] not   "Nobody is there."

zero suffix:

KT 200.4   மறந்தோர் மன்ற மறவா நாமே
               maṟantōr maṉṟa maṟavām nāmē
               forgot-he(h.)[maṉṟa] forget-not-we we[ē]
               "He has forgotten indeed. We, we won't forget."

neg. stem, long (more often neg. part.n.):

KT 6.4   ஓர்யான் மன்ற துஞ்சா தேனே
               ōr yāṉ maṉṟa tuñcātēṉē
               one I[maṉṟa] sleep-not-I[ē]
               "I alone, indeed, am one who does not sleep."

neg. stem, short, for n.sg.:

KT 254.2df.+7   கோங்கின்
               தலையலர் வந்தன வாரா தோழி …
               எய்தின ராலென வரூஉந் தூதே.
                              kōṅkiṉ
               talai alar vantaṉa vārā tōḻi …
               eytiṉarāl eṉa varūum tūtē.
                              Kōṅku[iṉ]
               head blossom they-came(n.pl.) not-come-it friend
               he-reached(h.)[āl] say(inf.) coming- messenger[ē].
               "The first Kōṅku buds have come. Not come, friend,

> has the messenger who comes to say [our man] has
> reached."

neg. stem, short, for n.pl.:

KT 261.5f.   என்கண் │ துஞ்சா வாழி தோழி
              eṉ kaṇ │ tuñcā vāḻi tōḻi
              my- eye │ sleep-not-they(n.pl.) live(sub.) friend
              "My eyes don't sleep, o friend."

verbal root -அல் -*al* as a negative suffix:

KT 290.1f.   காமத் தாங்குமதி யென்போர் தாமஃ
              தறியலர் கொல்லோ வனைமது கையர்கொல்
              kāmam tāṅkumati eṉpōr tām akt_u
              aṟiyalar-kollō aṉai matukaiyar-kol
              desire bear(ipt.) say-they(h.) they(pl.) that
              know-not-they(h.)^{kollō} such strength-they(h.)^{kol}
              "Those who say 'bear desire', do they not
              know it? Are they that strong?"

Here there are two *Caṅkam* examples for the negative verbal root
-இல் -*il*, first on a verbal root, then on a perfective stem as is fairly
normal from bhakti times onwards:

KT 113.3f.   இரைதேர் வெண்குரு கல்லது யாவதுந்
              துன்னல்போ கின்றாற் பொழிலே
              irai tēr veḷ kuruk_u allatu yāvatum
              tuṉṉal pōkiṉṟāl poḻilē
              prey search- white egret except anything
              approaching go-not-it^{āl} grove^ē
              "Nothing except the white egret searching for prey

will go near the grove."

(lit. "anything other than the egret will not go")

Pari 9.25   ஆய்வந்திலர்   *āyvantilar*

research-not-they(h.)   "The don't research."

There are rare occurrences too of a negative present tense – unclear, again, whether with temporal impact or not:

TVM 7.7.5.4   ஒன்று மறிகின்றிலே நன்னைமீ ரெனக்குய் விடமே

oṉrum aṟikiṉṟilēṉ aṉṉaimīr eṉakk_u uyv_u iṭamē

one^um know-not-I mother(2.pl.) me(dat.) escaping place^ē

"I don't know of any place, mothers – for me to escape to."

Special Constructions with -இல் -*il*

negation of action (expressed verbal noun):

KT 168.6   மணத்தலுந் தணத்தலு மிலமே

maṇattalum taṇattalum ilamē

uniting^um departing^um not-we^ē

"We can neither unite nor depart."
(lit. "we are without uniting or departing")

negation of quality:

NA 143.6   வழுவில எம்ம தானே   *vaḻu ilaḷ-amma tāṉē*

fault not-she^amma self^ē   "she, alas, is without fault."

negation of fact:

NA 193.5   தீதறிந் தன்றோ விலமே   *tīt_u aṟintaṉrō ilamē*

evil-it it-knew^ō not-we^ē   "We did not know of any evil."

(lit. "we were without knowing...")

nominalisation:

KT 93.4　　புலவியக் தெவனோ வன்பிலங் கடையே

pulavi ak̲t̲ᵤ evan̲ō an̲pᵤ ilam-kaṭaiyē

sulking that whatᵒ love not-we(loc.)ᵉ̄

"What is that, sulking – in us who are without love?"

KT 115.6　　நன்மலை நாட நின்னல திலளே

nal malai nāṭa nin̲ alatu ilaḷē

good mountain land-he(voc.) you- not-so-it not-sheᵉ̄

"Man from a land of good mountains, without you she does not exist."

　　Probably an isolated case is an impersonal construction with இலம் *ilam* instead of இல்லை *illai*:

TV 31.1　　தூதென் றிசைத்தா லிசையிலம்

tūtᵤ en̲r̲u icaittāl icai ilam

messenger said speak-if speak-absence

"If [I] speak 'speak as [my] messenger!' there is no speaking."

Double verb forms with -அல் *-al*

negation of quality with a pronominalised noun:

KT 47.4　　நல்லை யல்லை நெடுவெண் ணிலவே

nallai allai neṭu veḷ nilavē

good-you not-so-you long white moonlightᵉ̄

"You are no good, long white moonlight."

past tense negation:

AN 98.6　　அறிந்தன எல்ல என்னை　　*ar̲intan̲aḷ allaḷ an̲n̲ai*

she-knew not-so-she mother　　"Mother did not know."

verbal negation with a neg. v.n. as direct object:

NA 376.11f. வறும்புனங் காவல் விடாமை

யறிந்தனி ரல்லிரோ வறனில் யாயே

varum puṉam kāval viṭāmai

aṟintaṉir allirō aṟaṉ il yāyē

poor field guarding letting-not

you-knew(pl.) not-so-you(pl.)ᵒ duty- not- motherᵉ

"Haven't you understood that [our] virtueless

mother won't let [us] guard the empty field?"

-அல் *-al* with a subjunctive:

KT 224.6 துயர்பொறுக் கல்லேன் *tuyar poṟukkᵤ allēṉ*

misery I-bear(sub.) I-not-so "I cannot bear the

misery."

 Negative double verb forms allow for (multiple) rhetoric ambiguity:

KT 52.5 பரிந்தனெ னல்லனோ

parintaṉeṉ allaṉō

I-sympathized not-so-Iᵒ/no-so-heᵒ

"Did I not sympathise?"

or "I sympathised, did I not?"

or "I sympathised, did he not?"

 A double negation is to be understood as an emphatic positive:

KT 244.3 கேளே மல்லேம். கேட்டனம் பெரும

kēḷēm allēm. kēṭṭaṉam peruma

hear-not-we not-so-we we-heard great-one(voc.)

"It is not that we did not hear. We heard, great one."

15a. Double Verb Forms, *Muṟṟeccam*, Complex Verb Forms

Old Tamil knows a considerable variety of complex verb forms, both in the sense of lexical compound verbs and of auxiliary constructions. These usually consist of a nonfinite item (noun or verb) followed by a finite item. Apart from those there are a number of exceptions to the rule of having only one finite verb per sentence. First, there is the possibility of insertions; these usualy consist in *verba dicendi/ sentiendi* (cf. p. 132f.) and in optatives or imperatives. Double verb forms, that is, two finite verbs following directly upon each other, occur with the negatives (see Chapter 14), with emphatic verbs of existence (இருதல் *irutal*/உள்-தல் *uḷ-tal*/ஆகுதல் *ākutal*) and with some exceptional constructions, for example with செல்-தல் *cel-tal*, later also வருதல் *varutal*. Moreover there is the *muṟṟeccam* ("what demands a finite verb as a complement"), a construction where a finite verb is integrated somewhere in the clause but understood as nonfinite.

insertion of *verbum dicendi*:

KT 12.4 கவலைத் தென்ப வவர்சென்ற வாறே

kavalaitt̬ eṉpa avar ceṉṟa āṟē

crossroad-it they-say he(h.)- gone- way͏ͤ

"It has crossroads, they say, the way he has gone."

insertion of optative:

KT 19.3 இனைமதி வாழிய நெஞ்சே

iṉaimati vāḻiya neñcē

despair(ipt.) may-live heart͏ͤ

"Despair, may you live, heart!"

An added verb of existence, especially if it does not agree in number and gender with the main verb, can indicate an emphatic presence, if it is in agreement with the main verb, it may also signify a change of state. In such cases one might take the main verb as a participial noun:

Pū 20.1f.   பல்காலு நின்னை

வழிவாழ்வார் வாழ்வரா மாதோ

pal kālum niṉṉai

vaḻi vāḻvār vāḻvar ām-mātō

many time^{um} you(acc.)

way live-they(h.) live-they(h.) becoming-it^{mātō}

"Is it not[33] that those who walk (lit. live) you as the path

for a long time, shall live?"

NA 128.3   எனக்குநீ யுரையா யாயினை

eṉakku nī uraiyāy āyiṉai

me(dat.) you talk-not-you you-became

"You have become one that does not talk to me."

or "It is the case that you don't talk to me."

The special construction with செல்/வரு *cel/varu* seems to express an exhortation:

KT 198.5   படுகிளி கடிகஞ் சேறும்

paṭu kiḷi kaṭikam cēṟum

happen- parakeet we-chase we-go

"Let us go and chase parakeets that come down [into

the millet]."

---

[33] Here the negation is an attempt at rendering the flavour of the particle -மாதோ -*mātō*, politely suggesting that something is the case.

murr̲eccam with aspectual impact:

KT 275.2   கண்டனம் வருகஞ் சென்மோ தோழி

             kaṇṭaṉam varukam ceṉmō tōḻi

             we-saw we-come go! friend

             "Up! Let us come [back] after we have seen, friend."

AN 398.20f. பல்பூங் கானத் தல்கி யின்றிவண்

             சேர்ந்தனை செலினே சிதைகுவ துண்டோ

             pal pūm kāṉatt̪ alki iṉr̲ ivaṇ

             cērntaṉai celiṉē citaikuvat̪ uṇṭō

             many flower forest- abided today here

             you-joined go-if^e being-wasted-it it-is^o

             "If you were to go after joining [us] here today, abiding
             in the forest with many flowers, would there be [any]
             harm?"

epic *murr̲eccam* with an infinitive for a following change of subject:

Cilap 12.53 விருந்தின் மூர லரும்பின ணிற்ப

             viruntiṉ mūral arumpiṉaḷ nir̲pa

             feastⁱⁿ smile budded-she stand(inf.)

             "while she stood, as one who broke out in a smile like a
             feast"

murr̲eccam for rhetorical effect:

NA 373.3f.   மைப்படு மால்வரை பாடினள் கொடிச்சி

             யைவன வெண்ணெற் குறூஉ நாடன்

             mai paṭu māl varai pāṭiṉaḷ koṭicci

             aivaṉam veḷ nel kur̲ūum nāṭaṉ

             kohl happen- big mountain she-sang creeper-she

             wild-rice white paddy pounding- land-he

> "the man from a land, where the creeper woman pounds white paddy, singing about the cloud-covered big mountain"

Compound Verbs

The simplest type of compound verb combines an adverb or a noun with a verbal root. While a compound of verb and adverb often can be understood on the basis of its etymology, a verb compounded with a noun can be employed in order to intensify the meaning of the basic verb or can be semantically productive. Many compound verbs are lexicalised but by no means all of them, and with some of them the meaning depends on the context. The verbal class remains that of the simplex. The "prepositions" compounded with verbs are மேல் *mēl*, "upon"; கீழ் *kīḻ*, "beneath"; முன் *muṉ*, "before"; பின் *piṉ*, "after"; உடன் *uṭaṉ*, "along with"; உள் *uḷ*, "inside"; எதிர் *etir*, "opposite"; வெளி *veḷi*, "outside". The most frequent nouns are basic words for body parts such as தலை *talai*, "head", கை *kai*, "hand", புறம் *puṟam*, "back", but see the following (incomplete) list of examples:

எதிர்கொள் *etir-koḷ*	2.	"to receive"
வெளிப்படு *veḷi-p-paṭu*	6.	"to come out"
ஆற்றுப்படு *āṟṟu-p-paṭu*	11.	"to bring on the way"
கண்படு *kaṇ-paṭu*	6.	"to close one's eyes"
தலைப்பிரி *talai-p-piri*	4.	"to separate"
புறந்தா *puṟam-tā*	13.	"to protect; to defy"
வழி(ப்)படு *vaḻi-(p)-paṭu*	6.	"to follow, to worship"

A small group of verbs, in the early time most frequently உறுதல் *uṟutal*, "to experience", may function as a verbalisers by incorporating a noun, occasionally lexicalised: இன்புறுதல் *iṉp_u-uṟutal*, "to feel pleasure"; காமுறுதல் *kām-uṟutal*, "to desire" (contracted and lexicalised from காமம் உறுதல் *kāmam uṟutal*); அலம்வருதல் *alam-*

varutal and அலமருதல் *alamarutal*, "to be agitated" (lexicalised in both the uncontracted and the contracted form).

In this context the phenomenon of spontaneous noun incorporation should be mentioned, frequent especially in devotional and epic Tamil and recognisable by an accusative mark where a genitive would be expected:

Kul 1.4.1   மாவினை வாய்பிளந்து   *māviṉai vāy-piḷantu*

    horse(acc.) mouth ripped   "mouth-ripping the horse"

           ~ "ripping the mouth of the horse"

Compounds of two verbs also exist, such as போதருதல் *pōtarutal*, "to come"; மேவருதல் *mēvarutal*, "to be fitted for" (contracted from மேவு-வருதல் *mēvu-varutal*), but there are cases where it is difficult to distinguish between a verbal compound and an auxiliary construction.

As in any language, there are also a number of verbs that take verbal complements, in which case there is a frequent variation between the infinitive and various forms of the verbal noun, occasionally also with the absolute. Some of them are:

அயர்தல் *ayartal*	4.	"to be engaged in"
ஆ(கு)தல் *ā(ku)tal*	13.	"to be possible" (bhakti)
ஆற்றுதல் *āṟṟutal*	5.	"to bear"
இசைதல் *icaital*	4.	"to be possible"
இயறல் *iyal-tal*	3.	"to befall"
இயைதல் *iyaital*	4.	"to be agreeable"
உவத்தல் *uvattal*	12.	"to rejoice"
எய்தல் *eytal*	11.	"to grow weary"
ஒல்லுதல் *ollutal*	5.	"to be possible"

ஒழிதல் *oḻital*	5. "to stay behind, to cease"
ஓவுதல் *ōvutal*	5. "to stop"
குறித்தல் *kuṟittal*	11. "to intend"
கூடுதல் *kūṭutal*	5. "to be appropriate"
செல்லா/போகா *cellā/pōkā*	3./13. "not to be possible"
துடங்குதல் *tuṭaṅkutal*,	
தொடங்குதல் *toṭaṅkutal*	5. "to begin"
பிழைத்தல் *piḻaittal*	11. "to fail"
மறுத்தல் *maṟuttal*	11. "to refuse"
மாட்டா *māṭṭā*	5. neg. "not to be able"
வல்லுதல் *vallutal*	5. "to be capable, to master"
வேண்டுதல் *vēṇṭutal*	5. "to be necessary"

15b. Auxiliaries

Old Tamil already has a complicated system of auxiliary verbs. Some of them are still empoyed in the same function in modern Tamil, most notably the auxiliaries for passive and middle voices, but the majority is transitory; in fact each period and often each genre has certain favoured constructions. Not much useful work has been done in this area, and the following can only be counted as a few preliminary remarks and observations. The three most frequent nonfinite forms that enter into an auxiliary construction are the verbal root, the infinitive, and the absolutive, but we also find the verbal noun in -தல் *-tal*.

Auxiliaries that more or less seem to vanish after the *Caṅkam* corpus:

v.r. + கிற்றல் *kil-tal*	"to be able to"
v.r. + வருதல் *varutal*	starting an action
abs. + உறைதல் *uṟaital*	remaining in a stable state
abs. + அமைதல் *amaital*	reaching a new stability
[abs. + ஈதல் *ītal*	benefactive: already frozen into imperatives]

Auxiliaries that start in or continue into later Old Tamil:

v.r. + தருதல் *tarutal*	an action outside the control of the speaker or moving towards the speaker (since *Caṅkam*, prevailing, though ignored by the tradition)
செய்யா *ceyyā* abs. + நிற்றல் *nil-tal*	continuous form[34]

---

[34] Both ஒழுகுதல் *oḻukutal*, "to flow" and இருதல் *irutal*, "to be", have to be regarded as less successful predecessors of *nil-tal* for the continuous form; both

abs. + அருளுதல் *aruḷutal*   general benefactive (bhakti)

abs. + இடுதல் *iṭutal*   completion of an action (*Kīḻkkaṇakku*)

    விடுதல் *viṭutal*   completion of an action (late *Caṅkam*)

abs. + போகுதல் *pōkutal*   concluding an action with negative outcome

v.n. + உறுதல் *uṟutal*   beginning or undertaking of an action

    Auxiliaries that appear to be fairly stable:

inf. + படுதல் *paṭutal*   passive (stray occurrences already in *Caṅkam*)[35]

abs. + கொண்டல் *koḷ-tal*   middle voice (stray occurrences already in *Caṅkam*)

கிற்றல் *kiṟ-tal*, "to be able to":

KT 22.1f.   நீயிவ ணொழிய │ யாரோ பிரிகிற் பவரே

    nī ivaṇ oḻiya │ *yārō piri-kiṟpavarē*

    you here stay-behind(inf.) │ who(h.)ᵟ separate- able-

                             he(h.)ᵉ

    "Who will be able to separate while you stay behind?"

வருதல் *varutal* (inchoative/inceptive; onset of an action):

NA 298.5   அருஞ்சுரங் கவலை யஞ்சுவரு நனந்தலை

    arum curam kavalai añcu varum naṉam talai

    difficult desert crossroad fear- coming- wide place

    "the vast area where the crossroads in the difficult desert become frightening"

---

are occasionally found, preceded by an absolutive, from the *Caṅkam* corpus onwards.

[35] In the bhakti period, infinitive plus உறுதல் *uṟutal* can rarely be found as a passive construction instead of infinitive + படுதல் *paṭutal*.

உறைதல் *uṟaital* for remaining in a stable state:

KT 65.4   வாரா துறையுநர் வரனசை இ

              vārāt_u uṟaiyunar varal nacaii

              come-not staying-he(h.) coming longed-for

              "longing for the coming of him who stays away"

அமைதல் *amaital* for reaching a new (stable?) state:

KT 137.2-4   நிற்றுறந் துமைகுவெ னாயி னென்றுறந்

              திரவலர் வாரா வைகல்

              பல வாகுக

              nin tuṟant_u amaikuven āyin en tuṟantu

              iravalar vārā vaikal

              pala ākuka

              you- abandoned I-become-quiet if my- abandoned

              beggar(h.) come-not day

              many(n.pl.) may-become

              "If I were to abandon you completely,

              may the days the beggars abandon me [and] don't come

              become many."

தருதல் *tarutal* for an action outside of the control of the speaker:

KT 95.1   மால்வரை யிழிதருந் தூவெள் ளருவி

              māl varai iḻi-tarum tū veḷ aruvi

              big mountain fall-giving- purity white waterfall

              "the pure white waterfall that tumbles from the tall
mountain"

continuous form with செய்யாநிற்றல் *ceyyā + nil-tal*:

Poy 43.1+4   மனமாசு தீரு மருவினையுஞ் சாரா ...

தாந்தொழா நிற்பார் தமர்

maṉam ācu tīrum aru viṉaiyum cārā ...

tām toḻā-niṟpār tamar

mind blemish end-it difficult karma approach-not-it

they(pl.) worship-stand-they(h.) his-people(h.)

"Blemishes of the mind will end, and difficult karma will not approach those of his people who keep worshipping."

[Here a rare example of a *Caṅkam* predecessor to the continuous with another type of absolutive:

NA 242.10   தேடூஉ நின்ற விரலை யேறே   *tēṭūu-niṉṟa iralai ēṟē*

sought stood- Iralai stag   "the Iralai stag that kept seeking"]

அருளுதல் *aruḷutal* as a benefactive:

Tē 7.70.4.4   எனை யஞ்சலென் றருளாய்

eṉai añcal eṉṟᵤ-aruḷāy

me(acc.) don't-fear said grace(ipt.)

"Graciously tell me "do not be afraid!""

இடுதல் *iṭutal* for the completion of an action:

TVM 6.2.7.1f.   கடன்ஞால முண்டிட்ட | நின்மலா

kaṭal ñālam uṇṭᵤ-iṭṭa | niṉmalā

sea world eaten-placed | spotless-one(m.voc.)

"o spotless one who has eaten up the ocean[-girded] world"

விடுதல் *viṭutal* for the completion of an action:[36]

Kali 94.44f.   துகடீர்பு காட்சி யவையத்தா ரோலை

முகடு காப்பு யாத்து விட்டாங்கு

tukaḷ tīrpu kāṭci avaiyattār ōlai

mukaṭu kāppu yāttu-viṭṭāṅku

dust ended sight assembly-they(h.) palm-leaf

top guarding tied-let(abs.)-like

"like a palm-leaf of the insight[ful scholars] of the assembly,

firmly tied with the top protection after the dust is wiped off"

போகுதல் *pōkutal* for the completion of an action with negative outcome:

Pēy 74.1f.   நஞ்சூட்டு வன்பேய்

நிலமே புரண்டுபோய் வீழ

nañc_u ūṭṭu val pēy

nilamē puraṇṭu-pōy vīḻa

poison fed strong demoness

ground^e rolled-gone fall(inf.)

"so that the strong demoness, having fed [him] poison,

fell to the ground, rolling in contortions"

படுதல் *paṭutal* for the passive:

KT 288.5   இனிதெனப் படூஉம் புத்தே ணாடே

iṉit_u eṉa-p-paṭūum puttēḷ nāṭē

pleasant-it say(inf.) it-happens god land^e

"The land of the gods is called pleasant."

---

[36] Clear examples for *viṭutal* as an auxiliary are difficult to find in the early period, except in similes such as this, attested since the early anthologies (cf. KT 168.3 *viṭiyal virittu-viṭṭaṉṉa*, "as if dusk had spread").

[passive with உறுதல் *uṟutal* instead of படுதல் *paṭutal*:

Cilap 12.13.1 சீறூ ரொருமகனா னிரைகொள்ள வுற்ற காலை

    cīr̥ₐ ūr oru makaṉāṉ nirai koḷḷa-ur̥r̥a-kālai

    little village son(inst.) herd take(inf.)-experienced-time

    "at the time the herd was taken by one man from the
    little village"]

கொள்-தல் *koḷ-tal* for middle voice:

Poy 36.4   மண்ணிரந்து கொண்ட வகை

    maṇ irantu-koṇṭa vakai

    earth begged-taken manner

    "the way that he (Vāmana) took the earth for himself"

TVM 9.4.8.4 கண்ணனைக் கண்டுகொண்டேனே

    kaṇṇaṉai kaṇṭu-koṇṭēṉē

    Kaṇṇaṉ(acc.) seen-taken-I͂ᵉ

    "I have for myself seen Kaṇṇaṉ."

உறுதல் *uṟutal* for the beginning or undertaking of an action:

Tē 4.34.6   நீள்வரை எடுக்கல் உற்றான்

    தோள்முடி நெரிய வைத்தார் தொல்மறைக்காடனார்

           nīḷ varai eṭukkal ur̥r̥āṉ

    tōḷ muṭi neriya vaittār tol mar̥aikkāṭaṉār

    "the one from ancient Mar̥aikkāṭu (Śiva) put down [his

    toe] in order to crush head [and] shoulders of the one who

    undertook to lift [his] tall mountain (i.e., Rāvaṇa)"

Syntax

16. Particles and Word Order: -*ē* as a Full Stop and as Rhetorical Mark

The observation of syntactical patterns reveals the distribution of particles (cf. chapter 1.7, p. 56): the majority are found in main sentences, not in subordinate phrases [Wilden 2006]. These are patterns fairly strictly observed (though not without deviation) in the early *Caṅkam* texts. Afterwards things start to disintegrate: already in the *Aiṅkuṟunūṟu* constructions may be found that would not be possible in the *Kuṟuntokai*, and by the time of the *Kuṟaḷ* confusion prevails. [Note: this is also true of the *sūtra*-s in the theoretical texts (why?).]

The end of a sentence, i.e., a full stop, used to be marked by the particle -ஏ -*ē*. Main sentences may be verbal and nominal clauses, including exclamations and forms of address. Subordinate clauses comprise absolutive, infinitive, *peyareccam*, verbal root, conditional, concessive, causal, comparison, and embedded constructions (which can evidently contain other main sentences marked by particles, though rarely by -ஏ -*ē*, since the sentence-final function is taken over by the embedding verb or particle). Exceptions to particle marking are made for finite verb forms that are unambiguous such as the imperative or optative, negative forms (which consequently often cause problems, since they mostly do not distinguish finite verb from participial noun anyway) and also double verb forms. An exception for rhetorical purposes is a sentence beginning with the predicate; the end of a poem (depending on the metre) is always marked with a particle. A similar exception is the poetic subtype beginning with an aphoristic prelude, usually not marked by a particle. Sentence-final -ஏ -*ē* can be accompanied or substituted by a vocative (since the vocative for most nouns does not have a separate form, it can be marked by -ஏ -*ē*).

The basic distribution patterns account for "normal" word order and various types of focalisation:

normal word order: S O P(= f.v./pr.n.)-*ē*

postposition of subject: O P S-*ē*

postposition of object: S P O-*ē*

postposition of adverb: S O P adv.-*ē*

focalisation:

focalisation of subject: S-*ē* O P(-*ē*)

anteposition of object: [O-*ē* P S] rare

anteposition of adverb: [adv.-*ē* O P S] rare

anteposition of predicate (closed):   [O] P-*ē* S-*ē*

anteposition of predicate (open-ended):   [O] P-*ē* S

address: N-*ē*

S O P-*ē* verbal sentence:

KT 13.3f.   நாட │ நோய்தந் தனனே தோழி

               nāṭaṉ │ nōy tantaṉaṉē tōḻi

               land-he │ pain he-gave*ē* friend

               "The man from the land gave pain, friend."

S O P-*ē* nominal sentence:

KT 35.5   வாடையும் பிரிந்திசினோர்க் கழலே

               vāṭaiyum pirinticiṉōrkk_u aḻalē

               north wind*um* separated-they(dat.) fire*ē*

               "Even the north wind is fire to those who are separated."

S O P with an imperative not marked by a particle:

KT 2.1f.   தும்பி │ காமஞ் செப்பாது கண்டது மொழிமோ

               tumpi │ kāmam ceppātu kaṇṭatu moḻimō

bee | desire say-not seen-it speak

"O bee, speak of what you have seen without speaking
according to [my] desire."

S O P double verb form not marked by a particle:

KT 80.3   யாமஃ தயர்கஞ் சேறும்

yām aḵtₐᵤ ayarkam cēṟum

we that immerse(1.pl.sub.) go(1.pl.sub.)

"Let us go immerse ourselves in that."

O P S-*ē* subject postposition:

KT 170.4f.   மலைகெழு நாடன் கேண்மை

தலைபோ காமைநற் கறிந்தனென் யானே

malai keḻu nāṭaṉ kēṇmai

talaipōkāmai naṟkₐᵤ aṟintaṉeṉ yāṉē

mountain have- land-he intimacy

not-having-come-to-an-end well I-knew Iᵉ̆

"Me, I knew well that the intimacy with the man from
a land having mountains had not come to an end."

S P O-*ē* object postposition:

KT 50.5   புலம்பணிந் தன்றவர் மணந்த தோளே

pulampₐᵤ aṇintaṉ ṟₐᵤ avar maṇanta tōḷē

loneliness it-adorned he(h.) united- shoulderᵉ̆

"Loneliness has come to adorn the shoulder he united
with."

S O P adv.-*ē* adverb postposition:

KT 14.6   யா நாணுகஞ் சிறிதே

yām nāṇukam ciṟitē

we be-ashamed(1.pl.sub.) small-itᵉ̄

"We may be ashamed, a little."

S-*ē* O P-*ē* subject focalisation (emphasis):

KT 24.5f.   ... கொடியோர் நாவே

கொடியோர் நாவே

காதல ரகலக் கல்லென் றவ்வே

... *koṭiyōr nāvē*

kātalar akala kalleṉṟavē

cruel-they tongueᵉ̄

lover(h.) depart(inf.) 'kal'-said(n.pl.)ᵉ̄

"The tongues of the cruel ones,

they foretold that the lover would depart."

O-*ē* P S anteposition of the direct object (rare):

KT 73.1   மகிழ்நன் மார்பே வெய்யை யானீ

makiḻnaṉ mārpē veyyaiyāl nī

delight-he chestᵉ̄ hot-youᵃ̄ˡ you

"On the delightful man's chest you are keen indeed."

O-*ē* P S anteposition of the indirect object (rare):

KT 140.3   சுரனே சென்றனர் காதலர்

curaṉē ceṉṟaṉar kātalar

desertᵉ̄ he-went(h.) lover(h.)

"To the desert the lover has gone."

P-*ē* S-*ē* predicate anteposition (strong emphasis):

KT 112.4f.   அற்றே │ கண்டிசின் றோழியவ ருண்டவென் னலனே

aṟṟē │ kaṇṭiciṉ tōḻi avar uṇṭa eṉ nalaṉē

thus-itᵉ̄ │ see(ipt.) friend he(h.) eaten- my- innocenceᵉ̄

"Just like that – look, friend – is my innocence, which
he had eaten."

P-*ē* S predicate anteposition without particle to mark the end of the
sentence, i.e., the sentence goes on by coordination:

KT 113.1f.   ஊர்க்கு மணித்தே பொய்கை பொய்கைக்குச்

சேய்த்து மன்றே சிறுகான் யாறே

ūrkkum aṇittē poykai poykaikku

cēyttum an̠r̠ē cir̠u kān̠ yār̠ē

village(dat.)[um] close-it[e] pond pond(dat.)

distance-it[um] is-not-so[e] little forest river[e]

"Not far from the village is the pond, and from the pond
the little forest river is not distant."

P-*ē* S predicate anteposition as a rhetorical device, when the
subject is part of the next sentence too:

KT 92.2,5   அளிய தாமே கொடுஞ்சிறைப் பறவை ...

இரைகொண் டமையின் விரையுமாற் செலவே

aḷiya tāmē koṭum cir̠ai par̠avai ...

irai koṇṭamaiyin̠ viraiyumāl celavē

pity-they(n.pl.) self(pl.)[e] curved wing bird ...

food having-taken[in] they-hurry(n.p.)[āl] going[e]

"Pitiful are they, the bent-winged birds,

in a hurry indeed in [their] going since they have taken
food..."

S-*ē* = address:

KT 23.1-3   அகவன் மகளே யகவன் மகளே

மனவுகோப் பன்ன நன்னெடுங் கூந்த

லகவன் மகளே

akaval makaḷē akaval makaḷē

*maṉavu kōpp*ᵤ *aṉṉa nal neṭum kūntal*

akaval makaḷē

Akaval woman̆ᵉ Akaval woman̆ᵉ

chank-bead string like good long tresses

Akaval woman̆ᵉ

"Soothsaying woman, soothsaying woman,

with good long tresses [white] as strings of chank bead,

soothsaying woman!"

A rare exception in the old corpus is -ஏ *-ē* in a subordinate phrase, here attached to the absolutive:

KT 52.2   சூர்நசைந் தனையையாய் நடுங்கல் கண்டே

cūr nacaintaṉaiyai āy naṭuṅkal kaṇṭē

fearful-spirit longed-for-thus-you become(abs.) trembling seen̆ᵉ

"seeing [you] tremble as one longed for by a spirit"

17. Modal Particles

In early *Caṅkam* Tamil, particles are employed also to express modality. Usually they work in coordination with -ஏ -*ē*. The interrogative particles -கொல் -*kol*, -ஒ -*ō* and கொல்லோ *kollō* have already been treated in Chapter 11. In Chapter 1.7 there is a list of particles, which is not complete and does not list the various particle combinations that are possible. For many of them no hypothesis as to their function has been ventured so far; some are not attested in a number sufficient to form a hypothesis.[37] Some of the more important particles that seem fairly comprehensible are:

மன் *maṉ*	assertive with shades of evaluation; irrealis
மன்ற *maṉṟa*	assertive with shades of evaluation
ஆல் *āl*	assertive with shades of evaluation
அம்ம *amma*	lament; inviting attention
தில்ல *tilla*	wish
தெய்ய *teyya*	admonition
மாதோ *mātō*	particle of emphatically doubtful (rhetorical) question
மற்று *maṟṟu*	adversative/contrastive? (also change of subject, topic/perspective)

Among the unexplained particles remain the following: அத்தை *attai*, -அரோ -*arō*, -ஆரும் -*ārum*, கொன்- *koṉ*-, மாள *māḷa*, யாழ *yāḻa*. From the middle *Caṅkam* texts onwards the system deteriorates and from the bhakti texts onwards very often the old patterns are no longer heeded and the old functions often do not appear to make sense anymore. However, it is important to bear in mind that

---

[37] For கொல் *kol* as an interrogative and மன் *maṉ* and மன்ற *maṉṟa* as assertive particles see also Sivaraja Pillai 1932, appendices.

particles actually have to be described in two ways. They form syntactic patterns which can easily be demonstrated to exist. The determination of their function, then, is a second step, that may be controversial. The *Tolkāppiyam Collatikāram* contains a chapter on particles, *Iṭaiyiyal*, which does not describe syntactic patterns and which, in an additive manner, names ways in which particles have been used. The commentators accordingly had the choice of identifying one of those uses in a given passage or of calling the particle "expletive" (அசை *acai*). Notable is, first of all, that the vast majority of particles is either enclitic (if it is shorter than a regular metrical foot) or added in a separate metrical foot (*cīr*) after the predicate or focalised noun. Exceptions are the particle மற்று *maṟṟu*, which may appear between sentences, and the particle கொன் *koṉ*, which appears to be proclitic and entered into the dictionaries like a noun with the four functions identified by the *Tolkāppiyam* (TC 249i: அச்சம் *accam*, "fear", பயமிலி *payamili* "uselessness", காலம் *kālam*, "time", பெருமை *perumai*, "greatness").

Syntactical patterns:

-மன் -*maṉ* (certainty):   S PrN/(f.v.)-*maṉ*

postpositions marked by -ஏ -*ē*; combinations: மன்றில்ல *maṉṟilla*, மன்னோ *maṉṉō*, மன்னே *maṉṉē*

மன்ற *maṉṟa* (certainty):   PrN/(f.v.) *maṉṟa* S-*ē*

                                       P *maṉṟa*

combinations: மன்றம்ம *maṉṟamma*

-ஆல் -*āl* (surprising fact):   [O] P-*āl* S-*ē*
focalisation: [S] P-*āl* O-*ē*;

                                       [S] P-*āl* adv.-*ē*

                                       S-*ē* O P-*āl*

                                       O-*ē* P-*āl*

combinations: -ஆலம்ம *-āl-amma*, -ஆற்றில்ல *-āl-illa*

அம்ம *amma* ("alas"):	P *amma* S-*ē*(.)
focalisation in combination:	P *maṉr' amma* S-*ē*
	P-*āl amma* S

call for attention: அம்ம வாழி தோழி *amma vāḻi tōḻi* (?)

தில்ல *tilla* (wish):	P(opt./sub.) *tilla* ("would that...!" – desire)
	P(opt./sub.) *tillamma* ("if only...!" – irrealis)
தெய்ய *teyya* (admonition):	S O P-*ē*/-*ō teyya* ("please")
மாதோ *mātō*:	S O P-*mātō* ("is it not that...?")
மற்று *maṟṟu*:	S-*maṟṟu*
	maṟṟu-S
	(not restricted to the main sentence; also in a period; position more fluid)

combinations (always on the predicate): மற்றே *maṟṟē*, ஓமற்றே *ōmaṟṟē*, மற்றில்ல *maṟṟilla*

Examples:

assertive மன் *maṉ*:

KT 153.3   அஞ்சும நளித்தென் னெஞ்ச மினியே
             añcum-maṉ aḷitt_u eṉ neñcam iṉiyē
             fearing-it^man pity-it my- heart now^ē
             "Fearful indeed, pitiful is my heart now."

மன் *maṉ* in combination with நன்று *naṉṟu* for an irrealis:

KT 98.1-3   அவர் │ துன்னச் சென்று செப்புநர்ப் பெறினே

நன்றுமன் வாழி தோழி

avar | tuṉṉa ceṉṟu ceppunar periṉē

naṉṟu-maṉ vāḻi tōḻi

he(h.) | approach(inf.) gone saying-he(h.) obtain-if[e]

good-it[maṉ] live(sub.) friend

"If we were to obtain someone who goes to approach
[and] talk to him, that would be good indeed, o friend."

மன்னே *maṉṉē*:

KT 191.6f.   ஓதியும் புனைய

லெம்முந் தொடாஅ லென்குவெ மன்னே.

                              ōtiyum puṉaiyal

emmum toṭāal eṉkuvem maṉṉē

                              hair[um] don't-adorn

us[um] don't-touch we-say[maṉṉē]

"Don't adorn [our] hair

and don't touch us, we shall indeed say."

மன்னோ *maṉṉō*:

KT 229.4   ஏதில் சிறுசெரு வுறுப மன்னோ

ēt[u] il ciṟu cer[u] uṟupa maṉṉō

reason-not little quarrel they-have[maṉṉō]

"For sure they have a little quarrel without reason?"

assertive மன்ற *maṉṟa*:

KT 35.1   நாணில மன்றவெங் கண்ணே

nāṇ ila maṉṟa em kaṇṇē

shame not-they(n.pl.)[maṉṟa] our- eye[ē]

"Our eyes indeed, they are without shame."

assertive *-āl*:

KT 120.2   அரிதுவேட் டனையா னெஞ்சே
             aritu vēṭṭaṉaiyāl neñcē
             difficult-it wanted-you[al] heart[ē]
             "Indeed you wanted something difficult, heart."

lamentative *amma*:

KT 45.5   தெறுவ தம்மவித் திணைபிறத் தல்லே
             teṟuvatu amma i tiṇai piṟattalē
             scorch-it[amma] this- family being-born[ē]
             "A torment it is, ah, to be born into this family."

தில்லம்ம *tillamma* for an irreal wish:

KT 56.4   வருக தில்லம்ம தானே   *varuka tillamma tāṉē*
             may-come[tillamma] self[ē]   "Would that she came, she
                                          herself."

தில்ல *tilla* for a wish:

KT 57.4   உடனுயிர் போகுக தில்ல   *uṭaṉ uyir pōkuka tilla*
             together life may-go[tilla]   "May we go from this
                                          life together."

தெய்ய *teyya* for (gentle) admonition:

NA 215.8f.   இன்றுநீ யிவணை யாகி யெம்மொடு
             தங்கி னெவனோ தெய்ய
             iṉṟu nī ivaṇai āki emmoṭu
             taṅkiṉ evaṉō-teyya
             today you here-you become(abs.) us-with
             stay-if what[ō teyya]
             "Since you are here today,
             what if you stayed with us, please?"

மாதோ *mātō* as a question suggesting that something is the case:

KT 253.4   நாட்டுயர் கெடபி னீடலர் மாதோ

nāḷ tuyar keṭa piṉ nīṭalar mātō

day misery be-lost(inf.) after delay-not-he(h.)[mātō]

"Surely he will not delay further, so that [your] days are lost in misery?" ~ "Will he delay further...?"

adversative மற்று *marru*:

KT 299.1   இதுமற் றெவனோ தோழி   *itu marr_u evaṉō tōḻi*

this[marru] what[ō] friend   "This again, what is it, friend?"

மற்று *marru* as a mark of subject change, frequently used in narrative Tamil:

Kuraḷ 1155   ஓம்பி னமைந்தார் பிரிவோாம்பன் மற்றவர்

நீங்கி னரிதால் புணர்வு

ōmpiṉ amaintār piriv_u ōmpal marr_u avar

nīṅkiṉ arit_u-āl puṇarvu

protect-if suitable-he(h.) separation protecting [marru]he(h.)

leave-if difficult-it[al] union

"If [you want to] protect [me], protect [me] from separation from the one suited [to me]. When he, on his part (*marru*), leaves [re-]union will be difficult indeed."

Supplement on -*ō*

The particle -ஓ -*ō* is one of the most complex. There is an old layer (shared by Akam and Puram) where -ஓ -*ō* is a tonal particle of lament or mourning. This concerns metrical patterns within the old stock of Akam and Puram formulae: நோகோ யானே *nōkō yāṉē*, "ah, I ache". Its main function, however, as already shown, is that of an

interrogative particle (for examples, see Chapter 11). The syntactical pattern is:

S [O] P-*ō* (interrogative pronoun possible)

S-*ō* [O] P-*ē*

All types of postposition are possible ([O] P-*ō* S-*ē*, S P-*ō* O-*ē*, S [O] P-*ō* adv.-*ē*), but anteposition is rare. Perhaps as such -ஓ -*ō* is a possible addition to some types of imperative or optative forms, presumably adding a nuance of politeness (a doubtful "would you?"): KT 169.2 இறீஇயரோ *iṟīiyarō*, "let them break". Moreover, -ஓ -*ō* is frequently used for a demarcation of topic, also plausibly to be developed out of the interrogative function.

KT 221.1   அவரோ வாரார்   *avarō vārār*

            he(h.)ᵒ come-not-he(h.) "He? He did not come."

                                     ~ "As for him, he did not come."

KT 21.4f.   காரெனக் கூறினும்

            யானோ தேறேனவர் பொய்வழங் கலரே

            kār eṉak kūṟiṉum

            yāṉō tēṟēṉ avar poy vaḻaṅkalarē

            rainy-season say talking-if-even

            Iᵒ believe-not-I he(h.) lie use-not-he(h.)ᵉ

            "Even if you say it is the rainy season,

            I for one don't believe it. He does not use lies."

18. Circular Construction (*pūṭṭuvil*)

One of the traditional patterns of syntax within the poem is of utmost importance, as it is followed, in the old corpus, by roughly 30% of the material. Its Tamil name பூட்டுவில் *pūṭṭuvil* ("the drawn bow"), first attested in Nakkīraṉ's commentary on *Iṟaiyaṉār Akapporuḷ* 56 (under the name of விற்பூட்டு *viṟpūṭṭu*), then obtaining its own *sūtra* in *Naṉṉūl* 414. It concerns special poetic licences for postpositions which distort regular word order. The normal word order can be restored by reconnecting the end of the poem to the beginning, just as the bow string connects the two ends of a bow. [In the editions and translations published by the NETamil team a special punctuation mark has been used to mark this phenomenon, namely ∞, the mathematical infinity sign.]

If the same phenomenon is described in terms of particle syntax, we can say that the -எ -*ē* at the end of the poem is exempt from the normal rules of postposition: **not only nouns**, that is, subject or subjects in apposition (cf. p. 69), object and adverbial phrases, can be postpositioned, **but also nonfinite verb forms**, such as infinitive, absolutive and conditional.

Nominal postposition varies only with respect to length, that is, the final noun at the end of a poem can be the head noun of a longer phrase.

subject/subject apposition:

KT 16.1,5   உள்ளார் கொல்லோ தோழி ...

அங்காற் கள்ளியங் காடிறந் தோரே

uḷḷār kollō tōḻi ...

am kāl kaḷḷiyaṅ kāṭᵤ iṟantōrē∞

remember-not-he(h.)ᵏᵒˡˡᵒ friend ...

pretty leg spurge- wilderness traversed-he(h.)ᵉ̄

"Won't he remember, friend, ...

the one who has gone to traverse the wildernes of

pretty-trunked spurge trees?"

object (direct or indirect):

KT 181.1,7   இதுமற் றெவனோ தோழி ...

பெருமுது பெண்டிரே மாகிய நமக்கே

itu marr_u evan̲ō tōl̲i ...

peru mutu peṇṭirēm ākiya namakkē∞

this[marru] what[o] friend ...

big old women-we become(p.)- us(dat.)[e]

"This, what is it, friend, ...

for us who have become great old women?"

adverbial phrase of location:

KT 85.1,6   யாரினு மினியன் பேரன் பினனே ...

யாண ரூரன் பாணன் வாயே

yārin̲um in̲iyan̲ pēr an̲pin̲an̲ē ...

yāṇar ūran̲ pāṇan̲ vāyē∞

who[inum] pleasant-he big love-he[e] ...

fertility village-he bard mouth[e]

"Sweeter than all [and] great in loving is he ...

in the mouth of the bard, the man from the fertile village."

nonfinite postpositions

absolutive:

KT 66.1,5   மடவ மன்ற தடவுநிலைக் கொன்றை ...

வம்ப மாரியைக் காரென மதித்தே

maṭava man̲r̲a taṭavu nilai kon̲r̲ai ...

vampa māriyai kār eṉa matittē∞

foolish-they(n.pl)^manra breadth standing Laburnum(-tree)

...

new-they(n.pl.) shower(acc.) rainy-season say estimated^ē

"Foolish indeed are the broad-standing laburnum trees,

...

having taken the unseasonal shower for the rainy season."

infinitive:

KT 157.1,4   குக்கூ வென்றது கோழி ...

வாள்போல் வைகறை வந்தன்றா லெனவே

kukkū eṉratu kōḻi ...

vāḷ pōl vaikaṟai vantaṉṟāl eṉavē∞

'kukkū' said-it fowl ...

sword similar dawn it-came^al say(inf.)^ē

"*Kukkū* crowed the rooster ...

to say dawn has come like a sword."

conditional:

KT 245.2,6   நலமிழந் ததனினு னனியின் னாதே ...

பல்லோ ரறியப் பரந்துவெளிப் படினே

nalam iḻantataṉiṉum naṉi iṉṉātē ...

pallōr aṟiya parantu veḷipaṭiṉē∞

innocence lost-it^inum abundant pleasant-not-it^ē ...

many(h.) know(inf.) spread come-out-if^ē

"Much more unpleasant than [our] innocence's being lost

...

if it comes out, spreading for many to know."

It appears possible to distinguish several stylistic types of circular construction:

1. The most frequent and simple type is a poem that contains one single sentence where the head fits to the tail. Occasionally, if the poem contains more than one sentence, the end of the poem will fit its first sentence.

2. The poem contains more than one sentence (two, three, four), but one central element, perhaps the (logical!) subject or an apposition to this subject, follows in postposition. A subtype of this is a conditional postpositioned to the end, which is nevertheless valid for all preceding clauses.

In addition there is something that may be called the status of a visual circular structure, where what is postponed to the end grammatically cannot be counted, strictly speaking, as part of the first sentence of the poem, but of a subsequent sentence, although its presence is necessary in order to understand what is going on at the beginning of the poem, too:

3. The part of the poem postpositioned to the end is, grammatically speaking, an element of the immediately preceding sentence, but should, according to the normal word order, be read in front of it. It is also relevant to the sentence/s at the beginning of the poem.

4. The poem consists of grammatically and syntactically clear-cut and well-ordered sentences, which nevertheless seem to lean on one another, because, for example, the keyword for the understanding of the whole poem is its very last word.

The last type can be exemplified by *Kuṟuntokai* 1:

<div align="center">

செங்களம் படக்கொன் றவுணர்த் தேய்த்த

செங்கோ லம்பிற் செங்கோட் டியானைக்

</div>

கழறொடிச் சேஎய் குன்றங்

குருதிப் பூவின் குலைக்காந் தட்டே.

cem kaḷam paṭa koṉr̥ᵤ avuṇar tēytta

cem kōl ampiṉ cem kōṭṭu yāṉai

kaḻal toṭi cēey kuṉram

kuruti pūviṉ kulai kāntaṭṭē.

red field happen(inf.) killed demon(h.) reduced-

red stem arrow[in] red horn elephant

anklet bracelet redness hill

blood flower[in] bunch Malabar-glory-lily-it[e].

"Red the ground from killing, the demon reduced

by red-stemmed arrows, red-tusked [his] elephant,

anklets, bracelets – the Red One's hill

is full of Malabar lilies, bunches of blood-flowers."

Note that in contradistinction to verses in Āciriyappā metre, stanzas in Veṇpā metre end in a short metrical foot (see Chapter 20) and are exempt from "normal" postposition rules. They may finish with an absolutive postpositioned with respect to the main verb:

Pū 5. அடிமூன்றி லிவ்வுலக மன்றளந்தாய் போலு

மடிமூன் றிரந்தவனி கொண்டாய் – படிநின்ற

நீரோத மேனி நெடுமாலே நின்னடியை

யாரோத வல்லா ரறிந்து

aṭi mūṉril i ulakam aṉr̥ᵤ aḷantāy pōlum

aṭi mūṉru irant̥ᵤ avaṉi koṇṭāy – paṭi niṉra

nīr ōtam mēṉi neṭu mālē niṉ aṭiyai

yār ōta vallār arintu

foot three-it(loc.) this- world that-day measured-you
seeming-it
foot three-it begged earth taken-you earth stood
water flood body tall Māl^ē you foot(acc.)
who recite(inf.) capable-they(h.) known

"You who, it seems, that day in three steps measured
the world,

you who took the earth by begging for three steps, tall Māl

with the water flood[-coloured] body who stood on earth,

who knows [and] can sing your feet?"

19. Formulaic Repertoires and Formulae as Syntactic Matrices

Old Tamil has several sets of formulaic repertoire, beginning with *Caṅkam* poetry, but then also epic and devotional poetry. Only the first of them has been described to some degree, but it will be sufficient to point out the basics which can then be adjusted to various metrical conditions and delimitations of content. To recall briefly Lord's famous definition: a formula is a repetition under identical metrical conditions. As already discussed in the introduction, it is highly likely that Old Tamil poetry originated in an oral tradition since it is easy to show that its basic elements of composition were formulae, however, clearly overlaid with a written tradition since it can be shown how fomulaic systems disintegrate. Another aspect which is important to stress is that formulae function as signals in the interaction between bard and listener: even today an educated reader will know what to expect from the way keywords of the construction are positioned within a poem. Formulaic attribution and the interplay between formula, theme and system have first been described by Kailasapathy 1968, which has since been supplemented by more than a dozen publications by Vacek, summed up in his 2007 book.

A few examples are the descriptions of birds, forests and warriors:

KT 246.1   சிறுவெங் காக்கை *ciṟu-veṇ kākkai*, "small white crow"

KT 103.3   இரைதேர் நாரை *irai-tēr nārai*, "prey-searching heron"

KT 163.3   மீனார் குருகின் *mīṉ-ār kurukiṉ*, "fish-eating heron(obl.)"

KT 16.5   அங்காற் கள்ளியங் காடு *aṅ-kāṟ kaḷḷiyaṅ kāṭu*,
          "pretty-trunked spurge forest"

KT 67.5   நிலங்கரி கள்ளியங் காடு *nilaṅ-kari kaḷḷiyaṅ kāṭu*,
          "spurge forest with parched ground"

KT 216.2   வாடா வள்ளியங் காடு *vāṭā vaḷḷiyaṅ kāṭu*,

"unfading Vaḷḷi forest"

(KT 124.2   ஓமையம் பெருங்காடு *ōmaiyam peruṅkāṭu*,

"a big forest of toothbrush-trees")

KT 15.5   சேயிலை வெண்வேல் விடலையொடு

cēy-ilai veḷ-vēl viṭalaiyoṭu

"warrior(soc.) with a red-tipped white spear"

KT 378.4   சுடர்வாய் நெடுவேல் காளையொடு

cuṭar-vāy neṭu-vēl kāḷaiyoṭu

"young man(soc.) with a fire-tipped long spear"

A case in point are also the designations for the hero belonging to a particluar *tiṇai*, such as தண்ணந் துறைவன் *taṇṇan tuṟaivaṉ*, "the man from the cool ghat", மெல்லம் புலம்பன் *mellam pulampaṉ*, "the soft giver of loneliness", நன்மலை நாடன் *nal-malai nāṭaṉ*, "the man from a land of good mountains. These formulae then may again fall into subsystems (பெருவரை நாடன் *peru-varai nāṭaṉ*, "the man from the land of big mountain", குன்ற நாடன் *kuṉṟa nāṭaṉ*, "the man from a land of hills). Formulaic analysis also reveals how close the relation is between Akam and Puṟam; there are clear structural similarities in, say, the epithets used for warriors, women, and trees. Equally similar is the repertoire of mourning: there is no fundamental difference between an absent lover and a king fallen in battle.

The distribution of just one productive formula demonstrates the close relation between the old anthologies:

person/text	PN	KT	NA	AN	AiN
அளியான் யானே *aḷiyāṉ yāṉē*	–	30.6, 293.8	152.9, 289.9	–	460.5
அளியை நீயே *aḷiyai nīyē*	228.5	–	(14.12)	383.14	–
அளியன் தானே *aḷiyaṉ tāṉē*	257.5	–	–	–	–
அளியள் தானே *aḷiyaḷ tāṉē*	143.7, 254.11, 293.6	–	(324.1), 352.12	(73.7), (118.4), 146.8, 153.4, (224.18), 287.3, 339.11, 373.19, 381.18	–
அளிதோ தானே *aḷitō tāṉē*	5.8, 109.1, 111.1, 243.11	149.1, 212.4, 276.8, 395.7	101.6, 114.5	239.1	–
அளியம் யாமே *aḷiyam yāmē*	–	–	368.10	–	–
அளியர் தாமே *aḷiyar tāmē*	51.8, 52.8, 81.3, 237.8, 345.12	7.3	–	43.13, (78.12)	381.3
அளிய தாமே *aḷiya tāmē*	248.1	92.2	163.7	–	284.1, 455.3

Specific about the Tamil repertoire is the employment of formulae for structuring (and announcing) syntax, with sensitive spots especially

at the beginning of a poem (அம்ம வாழி தோழி *amma vāḻi tōḻi*) and the poem end (நோகோ யானே *nōkō yāṉē*), as described in Wilden 2006: 235ff.

A typical and very productive formula to end a poem is:

காடு *kāṭu*, "wilderness"[38]

சுரன் *curaṉ*, "waste land"[39]

இறந்தோரே *iṟantōrē* "he who traversed"

மலை *malai*, "mountains"[40]

குன்று *kuṉṟu*, "hills"[41]

This formulaic end appears to be complementary to the following poem beginnings or main sentences:

உள்ளார் கொல்லோ தோழி *uḷḷār kollō tōḻi*,

"won't he remember, friend?"[42]

யாண்டுளர் கொல்லோ தோழி *yāṇṭuḷar kollō tōḻi*,

"where is he, friend?"[43]

கேளா ராகுவர் தோழி *kēḷā rākuvar tōḻi*, "he doesn't hear, friend"[44]

வருவர்கொ றோழி *varuvar-kol vāḻi tōḻi*, "will he come, o friend?"[45]

வாரார்கொ றோழி *vārār vāḻi tōḻi*, "he hasn't come, o friend"[46]

கொடியர் வாழி தோழி *koṭiyar vāḻi tōḻi*, "cruel [is] he, o friend"[47]

---

[38] KT 16.5, 67.5, 216.2; NA 14.11, 189.10; AN 1.19, 25.22, 133.18, 151.15, 395.15.
[39] KT 211.7, 215.7, 260.8, 314.6; NA 92.9, 274.9; AN 141.29, 171.15, 201.18.
[40] KT 232.6, 253.8, 287.7, 285.8; AN 111.15, 155.16, 173.18, 185.13, 291.16, 247.13, 249.19, 313.17, 321.17, 347.16, 389.24.
[41] NA 18.10.
[42] KT 16.1, 67.1, 232.1; NA 92.1, 241.1.
[43] KT 195.3, 176.5, 285.3, 325.4; cf. AN 47.14.
[44] KT 253.1.
[45] KT 177.5, 215.3, 260.4.
[46] KT 314.4.
[47] KT 278.4.

எஞ்சினம் வாழி தோழி *eñciṉam vāḻi tōḻi*,

<div style="text-align:center">"we have left behind x, o friend"[48]</div>

Other elements to be taken into consideration are optical strategical points, such as the end of a penultimate line, where so often an imperfective *peyareccam* with a long sub-clause is found, or topical strategical points, such as the designation of the hero, for example நாடன் *nāṭaṉ*, giving rise to the expectation of the same type of sub-clause.

---

[48] KT 211.3.

20. Metres: Āciriyappā and Veṇpā – Theoretical and Practical Rules

Metre is a very complex topic, and here only a most basic introduction can be given.[49] The primary sources for the traditional descriptions of metre are the *Tolkāppiyam Ceyyuḷiyal*, the *Yāpparuṅkala Virutti* and the *Yāpparuṅkalak Kārikai*. The former started on the basis of the old system relevant for the metres of the *Caṅkam*, that is, basically Āciriyappā, occasionally contrasted with Vañcippā. Vañcippā never appears independently all on its own, Āciriyappā has been used also later in epic and epigraphical Tamil, for treatises, as well as for a few archaising texts such as the *Kallāṭam*. The *Tolkāppiyam Ceyyuḷiyal* also accounts for Veṇpā, as well as for Kalippā and Paripāṭal, the metres for the two latecomers in the *Eṭṭuttokai*. Veṇpā is the main metre of the *Kīḻkkaṇakku*, still used for some early bhakti works. It is also the main metre through the ages to write mnemonic stanzas such as author stanzas. Metrical calculation or scansion underwent a profound change during the late *Caṅkam* period, and the bhakti corpus sees an explosion of new metres based on rhythm and music with a fair amount of disregard for word boundaries, described in the two works mentioned above, that is, one treatise with two commentaries.

The metrical units:

எழுத்து *eḻuttu*	graphic unit that in Tamil may be either a vowel, a consonant or a consonant with a vowel	
அசை *acai*	smallest metrical unit which can have up to three syllables	
சீர் *cīr*	metrical foot made of *acai*	
அடி *aṭi*	line made of *cīr*	

---

[49] For further reading consult the introductions of Niklas 1988 and Zvelebil 1989, for details on classical Āciriyappā see Wilden 2014, for a detailed account of the bhakti metres see Chevillard 2014a+b.

Early metres regulate the number of metrical units per foot, the number of feet per line and the number of lines. It is only from Veṇpā onwards that stanzas are formed.

According to the old metrical system, two pairs of metrical units exist, நேர் *nēr* and நேர்பு *nērpu* along with நிரை *nirai* and நிரைபு *niraipu*. The later system of scansion does away with the two latter subtypes. In other words, while originally overshort -*u* was discounted metrically, later it was simply calculated as a short vowel.

The அசை *acai*-units:

nēr (C)$\breve{V}$[50]	*nērpu* (C)$\breve{V}$-C$_u$
(C)$\breve{V}$C	(C)$\breve{V}$C-C$_u$
(C)$\bar{V}$	(C)$\bar{V}$-C$_u$
(C)$\bar{V}$C	(C)$\bar{V}$C-C$_u$
nirai (C)$\breve{V}$-C$\breve{V}$	*niraipu* (C)$\breve{V}$-C$\breve{V}$-C$_u$
(C)$\breve{V}$-C$\breve{V}$C	(C)$\breve{V}$-C$\breve{V}$C-C$_u$
(C)$\breve{V}$-C$\bar{V}$	(C)$\breve{V}$-C$\bar{V}$-C$_u$
(C)$\breve{V}$-C$\bar{V}$C	(C)$\breve{V}$-C$\bar{V}$C-C$_u$

There are two possible "anomalies", namely *aḷapeṭai*, that is, a metrical lenghtening to three morae (spelled by adding a short vowel to a long vowel: சேஎய் *cēey*). Metrical lengthening may in rare cases be a lexical feature of a word, and it is often done as a poetic adorment or for musical reasons. But it is also a means of stretching what is metrically too short into an acceptable *cīr*. It is also possible to have a hypermetrical foot or a கூன் *kūṉ*, literally a "hunch".

---

[50] A rare special case is a metrical foot that is complemented by a *nēr* consisting of a consonant cluster: NA 98.2 செய்ய்ம்ம் *ceyymm*, which has to be analysed as *ceyy-mm = nēr-nēr*.

The possible combination of *acai*-units in a metrical foot (*cīr*) in Āciriyappā:

+	*nēr*	*nirai*	*nērpu*	*niraipu*
nēr	• (2)	• (3)	• (3)	• (4)
nirai	• (3)	• (4)	• (4)	• (5)
nērpu	• (3)	• (4)	• (4)	• (5)
niraipu	• (4)	• (5)	• (5)	• (6)

Āciriyappā allows two *acai* per *cīr* in any combination of *nirai*, *nēr*, *niraipu*, *nērpu* – regular (black), permitted (blue), irregular (red). In exceptional cases there may be three *acai* (listed below). The figure in brackets refers to the number of syllables they comprise. In theory combinations between *niraipu* and *nērpu* are irregular; in fact they do occur, but rarely. Lines have four *cīr*, the penultimate only three *cīr*, with the exception of Nūṟpā, the adaptation of Āciriyappā for theoretical texts. The number of lines is almost unrestricted, ranging from three-line poems in the *Aiṅkuṟunūṟu* up to 782 in the *Maturaikkāñci*, although an anthology may fix the number of possible lines (4-8 for the *Kuṟuntokai*). A poem ends in the particle -எ -*ē* (rarely in -ஒ -*ō* or -ஆய் -*āy*).

Practical Rules for Āciriyappā:

There is a close interaction between metre and sandhi. The end-consonant of a *cīr* often merges with the beginning consonant of the next. A *cīr* can start with a vowel only at the beginning of a poem. Inside the poem every *cīr* must begin with a consonant; the preceding

final consonant or final consonant with elided over-short *-u* go to the next *cīr* and bear the vowel.

1) An *acai* should not be counted across word-boundaries (this being the second fundamental difference between early and later metrical theory).

2) A *nēr* consisting of a single short open syllable can never begin a *cīr*.

3) Words should not be split across different *cīr*, apart from the final consonant or the final consonant plus over-short *-u* which is elided. Exempt from this rule are word forms of four *acai* and more (very rarely nouns, frequently finite verbs and participial nouns).

4) Word forms of three *acai* are borderline cases and can be accepted as a *cīr* in basically three situations:

    a) verb form + particle: வருவர்கொல் *varuvar-kol* (KT 177.5) = *nirai-nēr-nēr*, விடுநண்மன் *viṭunaḷ-maṉ* (NA 68.7) *nirai-nēr-nēr*.

    b) noun + case ending: வருவிருந்தின் *varu-viruntiṉ* (NA 53.8) = *nirai-nirai-nēr*.

    c) inserted pronoun: யிறுத்தன்றவர் *(y)iṟuttaṉr' avar* (NA 68.10) = *nirai-nēr-nirai*.

    [d) problematic *cīr*: னறையறையாத் *(ṉ)aṟaiyaṟaiyāt* (NA 46.7) = *nirai-nirai-nēr.*]

For verb forms plus particle of three *acai* there are different ways to lengthen them to four *acai* which can be split into two *cīr*:

    a) nominal or pronominal complement: காடிறந் தோரே *kāṭ' iṟantōrē* (KT 16.4) = *nēr-nirai nēr-nēr*; அவராந் றலரே *avar āṟṟalarē* (KT 305.4) = *nirai-nēr nirai-nēr*.

    b) metrical doubling of consonants: முகைநா றும்மே *mukai nāṟumē* (KT 193.6).

5) Similarly a number of hypo-metrical feet can be accepted, especially with *vinaiyeccam*-s (*ceytu/ceypu* type = absolutive) that make up a *cīr*: *cenṟu*, *vantu*... (i.e. analyse not as *nērpu*, but as *nēr-nēr*). This does not exclude, however, having *cīr* like *vīṟṟuvīṟṟuk* (PN 35.22) that count as *nērpu-nērpu*. Somewhat less frequent is the *nirai/niraipu* variation: *taṇintu* (KT 195.1) = *nirai-nēr* against *puṉantuḷarntu* (KT 214.1) = *nirai-niraipu*.

[For *niraipu/nērpu* nouns similar allowances can be made, but they are rare. Verbal roots in *niraipu/nērpu* are not acceptable. Their occurrence before a *cīr* beginning with a nasal has to be understood as *peyareccam* in -*um*.]

6) *Aḷapeṭai* and sandhi gemination can be metrically disregarded if necessary.

The rules for Veṇpā:

Veṇpā allows for two or three *acai* per *cīr* in alternating combinations of value, that is, a two-*acai cīr* ending in *nirai* must be followed by one beginning in *nēr* and vice versa. A three-*acai cīr*, always ending in a *nēr*, must be followed by a *nēr*. Veṇpā accepts four *cīr* per line, but only three in the last, and that last *cīr* is short, i.e., a mere *acai*, no full *cīr*. Veṇpā stands on the border between the old and the new type of metrical calculation. Within the verse it no longer counts நிரைபு *niraipu* and நேர்பு *nērpu*, but the short third foot in the final line allows them, under the designations of பிறப்பு *piṟappu* and காசு *kācu*. The short foot at the end has syntactic consequences: a Veṇpā does not follow the "normal" postposition rules and frequently ends in an absolutive even outside a *pūṭṭuvil*. The number of lines may vary, but the standard Veṇpā stanza has four lines; the *Kuṟaḷ* with only two lines is counted as a "dwarf Veṇpā".

An earlier poetic figure occasionally encountered becomes regular and obligatory from Veṇpā times on, namely *etukai*, a rhyme pattern

that concerns the first feet of each line. The minimum is a rhyme between the second syllables of the foot, but often the repeated parts will be longer. The two most frequent patterns are 1a+2a+2d and 3a+4a (Nēricaiveṇpā) or 1a+2a+3a+4a (Iṉnicaiveṇpā). In a Nēricaiveṇpā the rhyme word in line 2d is counted as a *taṉiccol*, a "solitary word", which often entails a syntactic caesura after the third foot of line 2, as is indicated in print by a hyphen before 2d. *Etukai* gives rise to two forms of poetic licence, namely semantic weakening of the repeated elements and changing of letters by insertion or deletion for the sake of the rhyme: Pēy 12.3f. நன்கோதி *naṉk$_u$-ōti* – பைங்கோத *paim-**k**-ōta*, with *-k-* inserted for the rhyme. Note that also the word order can be affected: Poy 100.1 ஓரடியுஞ் சாடுதைத்த *ōr aṭiyum cāṭu utaitta*, "one foot that kicked the cart", with a *peyareccam* **following** its head noun because of *etukai* with line 2 ஈரடியுங் *īr-aṭiyum*.

The second possible and frequent but not obligatory feature is *mōṉai*, alliteration within a line.

From bhakti times onwards metrical feet form rhythmical patterns based on combinations of *cīr* made from mostly two or three *acai*, traditonally using standard examples as autonyms:

cīr with two *acai*	***tēmā***	*nēr-nēr*		
	puḷimā	*nirai-nēr*		
	karuviḷam	*nirai-nirai*		
	kūviḷam	*nēr-nirai*		
cīr with three *acai*	***tēmāṅkāy***	*nēr-nēr-nēr*	***tēmāṅkaṉi***	*nēr-nēr-nirai*
	puḷimāṅkāy	*nirai-nēr-nēr*	***puḷimāṅkaṉi***	*nirai-nēr-nirai*
	karuviḷaṅkāy	*nirai-nirai-nēr*	***karuviḷaṅkaṉi***	*nirai-nirai-nirai*
	kūviḷaṅkāy	*nēr-nirai-nēr*	***kūviḷaṅkaṉi***	*nēr-nirai-nirai*

The most frequent stanza type still has four lines, but the number of *cīr* is variable from two to eight. With the disappearance of

niraipu and *nērpu*, over-short *-u* is counted as a normal syllable and word boundaries often become blurred by musical patterns. There is also an influence from the syllable-counting Sanskrit metres, and some metres count both, *cīr* and syllables.

Possibilities of metrical adjustment become more numerous in the later metres. Frequently there are doublets like என்ன *eṉṉa* (inf.) for என *eṉa* (inf.): ஓரூரிதுவென்ன *ōr-ūr-itu-v-eṉṉa* (Tē 1.1.3.3), or the reverse, அன *aṉa* for அன்ன *aṉṉa*: வாளன *vāḷ-aṉa* (Tē 7.20.1.2).

Metrical analysis of a verse in Āciriyappā: KT 3

நிலத்தினும்	பெரிதே	வானினு	முயர்ந்தன்று
nirai-nirai	*nirai-nēr*	*nēr-nirai*	*nirai-nērpu*
nilat-tiṉum	*peri-tē*	*vāṉ-iṉu-*	*muyarn-taṉṟu*

நீரினு	மாரள	வின்றே	சாரற்
nēr-nirai	*nēr-nirai*	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*
nī-riṉu-	*mā-raḷa-*	*viṉ-ṟē*	*cā-ral*

கருங்கோற்	குறிஞ்சிப்	பூக்கொண்டு	
nirai-nēr	*nirai-nēr*	*nēr-nērpu*	
karum-kōl	*kuṟiñ-cip*	*pūk-koṇṭu*	

பெருந்தே	னிழைக்கு	நாடனொடு	நட்பே
nirai-nēr	*nirai-nēr*	*nēr-niraipu*	*nēr-nēr*
perum-tē-	*ṉiḻaik-ku(m)*	*nā-ṭaṉoṭu*	*naṭ-pē*

Metrical analysis of a verse in Veṇpā: Poy 1

வையந்	தகளியா	வார்கடலே	நெய்யாக
nēr-nēr	*nirai-nirai*	*nēr-nirai-nēr*	*nēr-nēr-nēr*
vai-yam	*taka-ḷi-yā*	*vār-kaṭa-lē*	*ney-yāka*

வெய்ய	கதிரோன்	விளக்காக	செய்ய
nēr-nēr	*nirai-nēr*	*nirai-nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*
vey-ya	*kati-rōṉ*	*viḷak-kā-ka*	*cey-ya*

சுடராழி	யானடிக்கே	சூட்டினேன்சொன்	மாலை
nirai-nēr-nēr	*nēr-nirai-nēr*	*nēr-nirai-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*
cuṭa-rā-ḻi-	*yā-ṉaṭik-kē*	*cūṭ-ṭiṉēṉ-col*	*mā-lai*

யிடராழி	நீங்குகவே	யென்று
nirai-nēr-nēr	*nēr-nirai-nēr*	*nērpu*
yiṭa-rāḻi	*nīṅ-kuka-vē*	*yeṉṟu*

Metrical analysis of a verse in (slightly irregular) Āṟucīr
Āciriyaviruttam: TVM 5.5.1

எங்ங	னேயோ	வன்னை	மீர்கா	ளென்னை	முனிவதுநீர்
nēr-nēr	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*	*nirai-nirai-nēr*
eṅ-ṅa	*ṉē-yō*	*vaṉ-ṉai-*	*mīr-kā-*	*ḷeṉ-ṉai*	*muṉi-vatu-nīr*

நங்கள்	கோலத்	திருக்குறுங்	குடிநம்	பியைநான்	கண்டபின்
nēr-nēr	*nēr-nēr*	*nirai-nirai*	*nirai-nēr*	*nirai-nēr*	*nēr-nēr-nirai*
naṅ-kaḷ	*kō-lat*	*tiruk-kuṟuṅ*	*kuṭi-nam-*	*piyai-nāṉ*	*kaṇ-ṭa-piṉ*

சங்கி	னோடு	நேமி	யோடுந்	தாமரைக்	கண்களொடுஞ்
nēr-nēr	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nirai*	*nēr-nirai-nēr*
caṅ-ki	*ṉō-ṭu*	*nē-mi-*	*yō-ṭum*	*tā-maraik*	*kaṇ-kaḷo-ṭum*

செங்கனி	வாயொன்	றினோ	டுஞ்செல்	கின்ற	தென்னெஞ்சமே
nēr-nirai	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nēr-nirai*
cem-kaṉi	*vā-yoṉ-*	*ṟi-ṉō*	*ṭum-cel*	*kiṉ-ṟa-*	*teṉ-neñ-camē*

Metrical analysis of a verse in Kaṭṭaḷaikkalittuṟai
(5 *cīr* and 16 syllables): PK 1

பூமரு	கண்ணிணை	வண்டாப்	புணர்மென்	முலையரும்பாத்
nēr-nirai	*nēr-nirai*	*nēr-nēr*	*nirai-nēr*	*nirai-nirai-nēr*
pū-maru	*kaṇ-ṇiṇai*	*vaṇ-ṭāp*	*puṉar-mel*	*mulai-yarum-pāt*

தேமரு	செவ்வாய்	தளிராச்	செருச்செந்	நிலத்தைவென்ற
nēr-nirai	*nēr-nēr*	*nirai-nēr*	*nirai-nēr*	*nirai-nirai-nēr*
tē-maru	*cem-vāy*	*taḷi-rāc*	*ceruc-cem*	*nilat-taiveṉ-ṟa*

மாமரு	தானையெங்	கோன்வையை	வார்பொழி	லேர்கலந்த
nēr-nirai	*nēr-nirai*	*nēr-nēr-nēr*	*nēr-nirai*	*nēr-nirai-nēr*
mā-maru	*tā-ṉaiyem*	*kōṉ-vai-yai*	*vār-poḻi-*	*lēr-kalan-ta*

காமரு	பூங்கொடி	கண்டே	களித்தவெங்	கண்ணிணையே
nēr-nirai	*nēr-nirai*	*nēr-nēr*	*nirai-nirai*	*nēr-nirai-nēr*
kā-maru	*pūm-koṭi*	*kaṇ-ṭē*	*kaḷit-tavem*	*kaṇ-ṇiṇai-yē*

INDEXES

Index of Quotations

Abbreviations:

AiAi	*Aintiṇai Aimpatu*
AiE	*Aintiṇai Eḻupatu*
AN	*Akanāṉūṟu*
Cilap	*Cilappatikāram*
Cint	*Cīvaka Cintāmaṇi*
Kali	*Kalittokai*
KT	*Kuṟuntokai*
Kul	*Kulacēkaraṉāḻvār Perumāḷ Tirumoḻi*
Kuṟaḷ	*Tirukkuṟaḷ*
NA	*Naṟṟiṇai*
Pari	*Paripāṭal*
PeTM	*Periyāḻvār Tirumoḻi*
Pēy	*Pēyāḻvār Antāti*
PK	*Pāṇṭikkōvai*
PN	*Puṟanāṉūṟu*
Poy	*Poykaiyāḻvār Antāti*
Pū	*Pūtattāḻvār Antāti*
PV	*Pārataveṇpā*
TC	*Tolkāppiyam Collatikāram*
Tē	*Tēvāram*
TV	*Tiruviruttam*
TVM	*Tiruvāymoḻi*

AiAi   9.2 (p. 143), 26.1+4 (p. 101), 42.4 (p. 121)

AiE   7.1 (p. 121), 7.1v (p. 121), 55.2 (p. 121)

AN   KV.11 (p. 28), 1.4 (p. 106), 9.2 (p. 32n), 9.21 (p. 28), 16.14 (p. 80), 19.13 (p. 109), 49.15 (p. 44n), 66.11 (p. 109), 98.6 (p. 152), 113.9f. (p. 87f.), 177.13 (p. 137) 398.20f. (p. 156)

Cilap 11.14 (p. 98n), 12.13.1 (p. 165), 12.53 (p. 156), 21.40 (p. 121)

Cint   799.4 (p. 118)

Kali   1.3 (p. 88), 2.16-18 (p. 89), 47.17 (148n), 85.20 (p. 121), 86.10 (p. 121), 94.44f. (p. 164)

KT   **1** (p. 182f.), 2.1 (p. 64), 2.1f. (p. 168f.), 2.2 (p. 117), 2.4f. (p. 49, 129), **3** (p. 197), 3.1+4 (p. 49), 4.1 (p. 105), 4.2+4 (p. 85), 5.1 (p. 128), 6.3f. (p. 105), 6.4 (p. 149), 7.1f. (p. 72), 7.6 (p. 107), 8.1f. (p. 102), 8.2+6 (p. 104f.), 9.5 (p. 106), 11.4 (p. 117), 12.4 (p. 59, 154), 13.3f. (p. 167), 14.2f. (p. 126), 14.6 (p. 50, 119, 169), 15.4f. (p. 64), 15.5 (p. 186), 16.1 (p. 129), 16.1+5 (p. 179f.), 16.4 (p. 193), 16.5 (p. 63, 185), **17** (p. 125f.), 17.1f. (p. 133), 18.3 (p. 128), 18.4f. (p. 89f.), 18.5 (p. 58f.), 19.3 (p. 117, 118, 154), 20.1 (p. 123f.), 21.1-4 (p. 86), 21.4f. (p. 178), 22.1f. (p. 161), 22.2 (p. 76), 23.1-3 (p. 170f.), 23.2f. (p. 65), 23.3 (p. 120), 24.1 (p. 63), 24.5f. (p. 94, 169), 25.1 (p. 149), 25.2 (p. 119), 25.3-5 (p. 102), 25.5 (p. 100f.), 28.1 (p. 128), 28.4 (p. 112), 30.6 (p. 75), 31.4+6 (p. 124), 32.1-3 (p. 133), 35.1 (p. 175f.), 35.2-5 (p. 66f.), 35.3 (p. 99), 35.5 (p. 58, 112, 167), 37.1 (p. 65), 38.1-3 (p. 102), 40.3 (p. 120), 40.4f. (p. 70f.), 42.1+4 (p. 145f.), 42.2f. (p. 90), 45.4 (p. 104), 45.5 (p. 176), 47.1f. (p. 104), 47.4 (p. 152), 50.5 (p. 168), 51.3f. (p. 74), 51.3-6 (p. 124f.), 52.2 (p. 171), 52.5 (p. 153), 53.3 (p. 107), 56.3 (p. 63), 56.4 (p. 176), 57.4 (p. 176), 58.1 (p. 101), 62.2 (p. 50), 62.4f. (p. 126), 63.2 (p. 110, 119, 120), 63.4 (p. 119), 64.4f. (p. 143), 65.1-3 (p. 93f.), 65.4 (p. 162), 66.1+5 (p. 180f.), 67.5 (p. 185), 69.1-5 (p. 67f.), 69.2-4 (p. 85), 70.5 (p.

Index of Suffixes

-இகா *-ikā*	unexplained particle (p. 56)
[-இகும் *-ikum*	imperfective 1st person plural (p. 82)]
-இசின் *-iciṉ*	optative (p. 119), suffix for perfective participial noun (p. 79)
-இய *-iya*	infinitive (p. 92), optative (p. 118), perfective *peyareccam* 5th class (p. 99)
[-இயம் *-iyam*	optative 1.pl. (p. 118)]
-இயர் *-iyar*	infinitive (p. 92), optative (p. 118)
-இர்/-ஈர் *-ir/-īr*	2nd person plural (p. 37, 81); feminine plural (p. 37), irr. plural (p. 37)
-இல் *-il*	locative (p. 32+n), with verbal root conditional (p. 12, 139), with perfective stem suffix for the negative (p. 148)
-இலிருந்து *-iliruntu*	later ablative (p. 33, 85n)
-இலும் *-ilum*	with verbal root: concessive (p. 139)
-இன் *-iṉ*	oblique (p. 31, 32), comparative (p. 33, 49), with verbal root: conditional (p. 139)
-இன *-iṉa*	perfective *peyareccam* 5th class (p. 99); perfective neuter plural 5th class (folding table 3)
-இனும் *-iṉum*	comparative (p. 49), concessive (p. 139)
-ஈர்கள் *-īrkaḷ*	2nd person plural (p. 37), imperative plural (p. 12, 117)
-(உக்)கு - *(uk)ku*	dative (p. 32)
-உடன் *-uṭaṉ*	sociative (p. 32, 33)
-உடை *-uṭai*	possessive (p. 61), genitive (p. 32)

-ஒம்/-ஓம் *-om/-ōm*	1st person plural: participial noun (p. 37, 81), [pronominalised noun (p. 60)]
-ஒய்/-ஓய் *-oy/-ōy*	2nd person singular: participial noun (p. 37, 81), [pronominalised noun (p. 60)]
-ஒர்/-ஓர் *-or/-ōr*	honorific/plural: participial noun (p. 37, 81), [pronominalised noun (p. 60)]
-ஒள்/-ஓள் *-oḷ/-ōḷ*	feminine person singular: participial noun (p. 37, 81), [pronominalised noun (p. 60)]
-ஒன்/-ஓன் *-oṉ/-ōṉ*	masculine singular: participial noun (p. 37, 81), [pronominalised noun (p. 60)]
-ஒ *-ō*	particle of doubt, interrogation (p. 56, 122), mourning (p. 177), demarcation of topic (p. 177f.)
-க *-ka*	optative all persons (p. 120), [subjunctive 3rd persons singular and plural (p. 119)]
-கண் *-kaṇ*	locative (p. 32)
-கம் *-kam*	subjunctive 1st person plural (p. 82, 119)
-கள் *-kaḷ*	plural (p. 11, 37, 81)
-காள் *-kāḷ*	pl. vocative (p. 11, 31n)
-கி(ன்)ற்- *-ki(ṉ)r-*	suffix of the present tense (p. 11, 77)
-கி(ன்)ற *-ki(ṉ)ra*	present tense *peyareccam* (p. 99)
-கு *-ku*	suffix for imperfective finite verb (p. 80)
-(க்)கு *-(k)ku*	subjunctive 1st person singular (p. 82, 119)
-கும் *-kum*	subjunctive 1st person plural (p. 82, 119)
-கெழு *-keḻu*	genitive (p. 32)
-கொல் *-kol*	interrogative particle (p. 56, 122)

-கொல்லோ *-kollō*	rhetorical interrogative particle (p. 122)
-கொண்டு *-koṇṭu*	postposition "with" (p. 85)
-(த்)தல் *-(t)tal*	verbal noun (p. 111)
-த *-ta*	perfective *peyareccam* (p. 99)
-தது *-tatu*	(perfective) verbal noun (p. 111)
-தமை *-tamai*	perfective verbal noun (p. 111)
-தலை *-talai*	locative (p. 32)
-(த்)தி *-(t)ti*	subjunctive 2nd person singular (p. 82, 119, 120)
-(த்)திர் *-(t)tir*	subjunctive 2nd person plural (p. 82, 120)
-தில் *-tillamma*	particle of irreal wish (p. 174)
-தில்ல *-tilla*	particle of wish (p. 56, 172, 174)
-த்து *-ttu*	oblique (p. 31, 32)
-(த்)து *-(t)tu*	n.sg. (p. 37, 81), absolutive (p. 84)
-தும் *-tum*	subjunctive 1st person plural (p. 120)
-தெய்ய *-teyya*	particle of admonition (p. 56, 172)
-தேளத்து *-tēettu*	locative (p. 32)
-தொறு(ம்) *-toṟu(m)*	indefinite suffix (p. 44)
-தோறு(ம்) *-tōṟu(m)*	indefinite suffix (p. 44)
-நின்று *-ninṟu*	ablative postposition (p. 33, 85)
-ப *-pa*	imperfective 3rd person plural, rarely honorific (p. 82)
-(ப்)பல் *-(p)pal*	imperfective 1st person singular (p. 81)
-(ப்)பான் *-(p)pāṉ*	infinitive (p. 93)
-(ப்)பு *-(p)pu*	abstract noun (p. 35), absolutive (p. 84)

-மதி *-mati*	imperative (p. 117)
-மர்/-மார் *-mar/-mār*	plural/honorific (p. 11, 37)
-மருங்கின் *-maruṅkin*	locative (p. 32)
-மற்று *-marru*	adversative particle (p. 57, 172)
-மன் *-man*	assertive particle (p. 57, 172)
-மன்ற *-manra*	assertive particle (p. 57, 172)
-மாட்டு *-māṭṭu*	locative (p. 32)
-மாது *-mātu*	unexplained particle (p. 57)
-மாதோ *-mātō*	particle of rhetorical interrogation (p. 57, 172)
-மார் *-mār*	imperfective 3rd person plural (p. 11, 82), infinitive (p. 92)
-மாள *-māḷa*	unexplained particle (p. 57)
-மின் *-min*	imperative (p. 117)
-மின்கள் *-minkaḷ*	imperative plural (p. 12)
-மீர் *-mīr*	2nd person plural (p. 11, 37, 81)
-மீர்கள் *-mīrkaḷ*	2nd person plural (p. 37)
-முதல் *-mutal*	locative (p. 32)
[-மே *-mē*	imperative (p. 117)]
-மேன *-mēna*	locative (p. 32)
-மோ *-mō*	imperative (p. 117)
-யாழ *-yāḻa*	unexplained particle (p. 57)
-வது *-vatu*	(imperfective) verbal noun (p. 111)
-வயின் *-vayin*	locative (p. 32)
-(வ)ல் *-(v)al*	imperfective 1st person singular (p. 81)
-வான் *-vān*	infinitive (p. 93)

Index of Grammatical Categories

Literature

1. Text Editions

Akanāṉūṟu + Old Comm. (1-90), Comm. (91-160), Ed. by U.Vē.Rā. Rākavaiyaṅkar/Rājagōpalāryaṉ. Mayilapūr 1933.

Cilappaṭikāram. Ed. + Comm. by U.V. Cāminātaiyar. Chennai 1892 (reprint with glosses Ceṉṉai 2001).

Cīvaka Cintāmaṇi + Comm. by Nacciṉārkkiṉiyar. Ed. by U.Vē. Cāminātaiyar, Kaḻakam, Ceṉṉai 1959.

Iṟaiyaṉār Akapporuḷ (+ *Nakkīraṉ's urai*). Ed. by Tirunelvēlit Teṉ-nintiya Caivacittānta Nūṟpatippuk Kaḻakam, Ceṉṉai, Reprint 1964.

Kalittokai. Crit. Ed. by T. Rajeswari. 2 vols, École française d'Extrême-Orient / Tamilmann Patippakam (Critical Texts of Caṅkam Literature 3.1-2), Pondicherry / Chennai 2015.

Kuṟuntokai. Crit. Ed., Transl., Notes + Word Index by E. Wilden. 3 vols, École française d'Extrême-Orient / Tamilmann Patippakam (Critical Texts of Caṅkam Literature 2.1-3), Pondicherry / Chennai 2010.

Mutal, *Iraṇṭām*, *Mūṇṭām Tiruvantāti* + *Maṇipravāḷa Vyākyā* by Periyavāccaṉpiḷḷai + pratipatam by Rāmānujācāryar. Śrīnikētana Mutrākṣaracālai, Ceṉṉappaṭṭaṇam 1901 (various reprints).

Naṟṟiṇai. Crit. Ed., Transl., Notes + Word Index by E. Wilden. 3 vols, École française d'Extrême-Orient / Tamilmann Patippakam (Critical Texts of Caṅkam Literature 1.1-3), Pondicherry / Chennai 2008.

Patiṉōrān Tirumuṟai. Ed. by Āṟumukanāvalar, Vittiyānupālaṉa-yantiracālai, Ceṉṉapaṭṭaṇam, Paritāpi v° (= 1852/53).

Paripāṭal + Parimēlaḻakar's Comm. Ed. by U.V. Cāminātaiyar. Ceṉṉai 1918, 1935 (reprint without Comm. Ceṉṉai 1995).

Pārataveṇpā. Ed. by S. Kiruṣṇasāmi Aiyaṅkār. Centamiḻ Mantiram Puttakacālai, Ceṉṉai 1925.

Patiṉeṇkīḻkkaṇakku. Ed. by Es. Rājam. Ceṉṉai 1959.

Perumāḷ Tirumoḻi + Comm. by Periyavāccāṉ Piḷḷai. Ed. by S. Kiruṣṇasvāmi Aiyaṅkār. Śrī Vaiṣṇava Śrī, Tiruccirāppaḷḷi 1997.

Puṟanāṉūṟu. + Old Comm. Ed. by U.V. Cāmiṉātaiyar. Ceṉṉai 1894, 1923 (reprint without Comm. Ceṉṉai 1993).

Tēvāram. Hymnes Śivaïtes Du Pays Tamoul. Ed. by T.V. Gopal Iyer. Institut Français d'Indologie (Publications de l'IFI 68.1-3), Pondichéry 1984, 1985 and 1986.

Tirukkuṟaḷ mūlamum Parimēlaḻakar uraiyum. Ed. by Vaṭivēlu Ceṭṭiyār. 3 vols, Maturaip Palkalaikkaḻakam [1904], 1972–76 (with Tiruvaḷḷuvar Mālai).

Tiruvāymoḻi + various *urai*-s: Ed. by Cē. Kiruṣṇamācāriyar. 5 vols, Nōpil Accukkūṭam, Tiruvallikkēṇi 1924-1929.

Tiruviruttam. Ed. by Śrīvaiṣṇava Kranta Mutrāpakasabhaiyār, Śrī Nikētana Mutrākṣara Cālai, Ceṉṉappaṭṭaṇam 1893/94.

Tolkāppiyam Eḻuttu, *Col* + *Poruḷ* + all the Comm. Ed. in 14 vol. by Ti.Vē. Kōpālaiyar. Tamilmann Patippakam, Ceṉṉai 2003.

2.1 Grammars

Agesthialingom, S. 1979: *A Grammar of Old Tamil with special reference to Patirruppattu.* Aṇṇāmalai University, Aṇṇāmalai nakar. [contains a full word index to *Patiṟṟuppattu*]

Andronov, M.S. 1969: *A Grammar of Modern and Classical Tamil.* New Century Book House, Madras.

Beythan, H. 1943: *Praktische Grammatik der Tamilsprache.* Harrassowitz, Leipzig.

Graul, K. 1855: *Outline of Tamil Grammar.* Leipzig.

Lehmann, Th. 1994: *Grammatik des Alttamil.* Franz Steiner Verlag, Stuttgart.

Lehmann, Th. 1998: "Old Tamil". In: Sanford B. Steever (ed.), *The Dravidian Languages*. Routledge, London / New York, pp. 75-99.

Rajam, V.S. 1992: *A Reference Grammar of Classical Tamil Poetry*. Philadelphia.

Zvelebil, K.V. 1967: "The Language of Peruṅkuṉṟūr Kiḻār". In: K. Zvelebil, Yu. Glasov & M. Andronov (eds). *Introduction to the Historical Grammar of the Tamil Language*. Moscow, pp. 9-109.

2.2. Dictionaries and Word Indexes

Andiappa Pillai, D. 1970: *Descriptive Grammar of Kalittokai*. Unpublished Ph.D. thesis. University of Kerala, Trivandrum.

Dravidian Borrowings from Indo-Aryan. Ed. by T. Burrow & M.B. Emeneau. University of California Press, Berkeley and Los Angeles 1962.

Dravidian Etymological Dictionary. Ed. by T. Burrow & M.B. Emeneau. 1st ed. London 1961, 2nd ed. Oxford 1984.

Dravidian Etymological Dictionary. Supplement. Ed. by T. Burrow & M.B. Emeneau. Clarendon Press, Oxford 1968.

Elayaperumal, M. 1975: *Grammar of Aigkurunuuru with Index*. University of Kerala, Trivandrum.

Index des mots de la littérature tamoule ancienne. 3 vols, Institut Français d'Indologie (Publications de l'IFI 37.1-3), Pondichéry 1967-1970.

Kamatchinathan, A. 1964: *Grammatical Study of Narrinai with Translation, Transliteration, and Index*. Unpublished Ph.D. thesis. University of Kerala, Trivandrum.

Krishnambal, S. R. 1974: *Grammar of Kuruntokai with Index*. University of Kerala, Trivandrum.

Lehmann, Th./Malten, Th. 1992: *A Word Index of Old Tamil Caṅkam Literature*. Franz Steiner Verlag (Beiträge zur Südasienforschung

Südasien-Institut Universität Heidelberg Band 147), Stuttgart. [Indian ed. IIAS 2007]

Subrahmanian, N. 1966b: *Pre-Pallavan Tamil Index: Index of Historical Material in Pre-Pallavan Tamil Literature*. University of Madras, Madras (reprint Madras 1990).

Subramanian, S.V. 1965: *Descriptive Grammar of Cilappatikaaram*. Paari Nilayam, Madras.

Subramanian, S.V. 1972: *Grammar of AkanaanuuRu with Index*. University of Kerala, Trivandrum.

Subramoniam, V.I. 1962. *Index of Puranaanuuru*. University of Kerala, Trivandrum.

Sundaram, R.M. 1964: *Grammatical Study of Pattuppaattu with Index*, *Text and Translation*. Unpublished Ph.D. thesis. University of Kerala, Trivandrum.

Tamil Lexicon. 7 vols, University of Madras, reprint Madras 1982.

Tamiḻ ilakkiyap pērakarāti [Tamil-Tamil dictionary of classical Tamil literature in 5 vols]. Cānti Cātaṉā, Ceṉṉai 2001.

Tamiḻk kalveṭṭuc collakarāti [Tamil-Tamil dictionary of epigraphic Tamil in 2 vols]. Cānti Cātaṉā, Ceṉṉai 2002.

Vaidyanathan, S. 1971: *Indo-Aryan Loanwords in Old Tamil*. Rajan Publishers, Madras.

Vaiṇava urainaṭai varalāṟṟu muṟait tamiḻp pērakarāti [Tamil-Tamil dictionary of Vaiṣṇava Tamil in 3 vols]. Cānti Cātaṉā, Ceṉṉai 2001.

2.3. Studies on Individual Linguistic Topics

Britto, F. 1986: *Diglossia: A Study on the Theory with Application to Tamil*. Georgetown University Press, Washington D.C.

Chevillard, J.-L. 1991: "Remarques sur l'évolution du système des temps en tamoul". *Bulletin d'Études Indiennes* 9 (1991), pp. 15-36.

Chevillard, J.-L. 1996: "The Conception of 'Coordination' in Ancient Tamil Grammar". In: D. Cram, A. Linn & E. Nowak (eds), *History of Linguistics*, vol. 2: *From Classical to Contemporary Linguistics*, Amsterdam/Philadelphia, pp. 313-320.

Chevillard, J.-L., 2004, "Ideophones in Tamil: a historical perspective on the X-enal expressives (*Olikkuṟippu Āṟṟuppaṭai*)". In: J.-L. Chevillard & E. Wilden (eds), *South Indian Horizons: Felicitation Volume for François Gros on the occasion of his 70th birthday*, Institut Français de Pondichéry / École française d'Extrême-Orient (Publication du département d'Indologie 94), pp. 407-433.

Chevillard, J.-L. 2007a: "Syntactic Duality in Classical Tamil Poems". In: C.P. Masica (ed.), *Old and New Perspectives on South-Asian Languages – Grammar and Semantics*, Motilal Banarsidas (MLBD Series in Linguistics 16), pp. 177-210.

Chevillard, J.-L. 2007b: "The concept of ticaiccol in Tamil grammatical literature and the regional diversity of Tamil classical literature". In: M. Kannan (ed.), *Streams of Language: Dialects in Tamil*, French Institute of Pondicherry, pp. 21-50.

Chevillard, J.-L. 2014a: "Metre in Tamil Bhakti Literature and the Problem of Their (Occasional) Description in Treatises (Studies in Tamil Metrics – 2)". In: *Mapping the Chronology of Bhakti. Milestones, Stepping Stones, and Stumbling Stones. Proceedings of a workshop held in honour of Pandit R. Varada Desikan*, Institut Français de Pondichéry / École française d'Extrême-Orient (Collection Indologie 124), Pondichéry, pp. 39-96.

Chevillard, J.-L. 2014b: "Enumeration techniques in Tamil metrical treatises (Studies in Tamil Metrics – 3)". In: Whitney Cox & Vincenzo Vergiani (eds), *Bilingual Discourse and Cross-Cultural Fertilisation: Tamil and Sanskrit in Medieval India*, Institut Français de Pondichéry / École française d'Extrême-Orient (Collection Indologie 121), Pondichéry, pp. 241-322.

Deigner J. 1998: *Syntaktische Analyse von Verbalpartizip und Infinitiv im modernen Tamil. Unter Berücksichtigung synthetischer und analytischer Strukturen und des Verbalaspekts*. Harrassowitz, Wiesbaden.

Kailasapathy, K. 1968: *Tamil Heroic Poetry*. Oxford University Press, London.

Lehmann, Th. 2004: "Pronoun Incorporation in Old Tamil" In: J.-L. Chevillard & E. Wilden (eds), *South Indian Horizons: Felicitation Volume for François Gros on the occasion of his 70th birthday*, Institut Français de Pondichéry / École française d'Extrême-Orient (Publication du département d'Indologie 94), Pondichéry, pp. 307-322.

Lord, A. B. 1964: *The Singer of Tales*. Cambridge, Mass. 1964.

Niklas, U. 1988: "Introduction to Tamil Prosody", *Bulletin de l'École française d'Extrême-Orient* 77 (1988): 166-227.

Sivaraja Pillai, K.N. 1932: *The Chronology of the Early Tamils*. Madras 1932. [containing valuable appendixes on the particles *kol* and *maṉ/maṉṟa*]

Steever, S.B. 1988: *The Serial Verb Formation in the Dravidian Languages*. Delhi.

Steever, S.B. 1993: *Analysis to Synthesis. The Development of Complex Verb Morphology in the Dravidian Languages*. New York / Oxford.

Vacek, J. 2007: *Flowers & Formulas. Nature as Symbolic Code in Old Tamil Love Poetry*. Charles University in Prague, The Carolinum Press, Prague.

Wilden, E. 2006: *Literary Techniques in Old Tamil Caṅkam Poetry: The Kuṟuntokai*. Harrassowitz (Beiträge zur Kenntnis südasiatischer Sprachen und Literaturen 15), Wiesbaden. [chapter on particles: pp. 49-126]

Wilden, E. 2014: 30. "*Āciriyappā* – The Unwritten Rules of Classical Tamil Metre". *Bulletin d'Études Indiennes* 32 (2014): 293-309.

Wilden, E. 2016: "Functions of the Verbal Root in Early Old Tamil Poetry". In: Nikolai Gordiychuk (ed.), *Tamiḻ tanta paricu* [felicitation volume for Alexander Dubianski], Orientalia et Classica LXIII, Moscow, pp. 124-139.

Zvelebil, K.V. 1954: "The Enclitic Vowels (-ā, -ē, -ō) in Modern Tamil". *Archív Orientalní* 22 (1954): 375-405. (= Orientalia Pragensia XIII. Kamil V. Zvelebil. *Tamoulica et Dravidica. A Selection of Papers on Tamil and Dravidian Linguistics*. Ed. by J. Vacek and J. Dvorak. Acta Universitas Carolinae Philologica 3, Prague 1995, pp. 13-39.)

Zvelebil, K.V. 1955: "On Emphasis and Intensification in Tamil". *Archív Orientalní* 23 (1955): 435-464. (= Orientalia Pragensia XIII. Prague 1995, pp. 41-66.)

Zvelebil, K.V. 1957a: "Tentative Periodization of the Development of Tamil". *Tamil Culture* VI (1957): 50-55. (= Orientalia Pragensia XIII. Prague 1995, pp. 133-136.)

Zvelebil, K.V. 1957b: "Emphasis in Early Old Tamil". *Tamil Culture* VI (1957): 226-234. (= Orientalia Pragensia XIII. Prague 1995, pp. 141-145).

Zvelebil, K.V. 1989: *Classical Tamil Prosody. An Introduction*. New Era Publications, Madras 1989.